This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 00329335 8

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

KBD

A Brasilian Prince introduced to King Henry the 8th

G. Shea. sc.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE

WORLD DISPLAYED;

N 2088

OR,

~~6271~~

A COLLECTION

OF

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS,

SELECTED FROM

THE WRITERS OF ALL NATIONS.

EMBELLISHED WITH PLATES.

~~6271~~

IN TEN VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

DUBLIN:

PRINTED BY J. CHRISTIE, 17, ROSS-LANE.

1815.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
436740
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1908

2037

910
W2

FEB 1 1908

Transfer from Circ. Dept

CONTENTS.

THE CONQUEST OF PERU.

Page

Chap. I. Francis Pizarro undertakes the discovery of Peru; obtains a particular account of its immense riches, and returns to Panama, where, being opposed by the governor, he embarks for Spain 1

Chap. II. Pizarro's favourable reception from Charles V. His return to Panama, and descent at Tumbez, where he defeats the inhabitants, seizes their riches, and builds a fort. State of Peru. The assistance of Pizarro sought by the contending parties. The inca Atabaliba is wantonly attacked, and taken prisoner. His army massacred. He is afterwards basely put to death 8

Chap. III. The divided state of Peru. Manco Capac acknowledged inca. Pedro de Alverado enters Peru; is induced to retire. Pizarro lays the foundations of Lima and Truxillo. Almagro attempts the conquest of Chili. His failure. The government of Cuzco attacked by the natives. Divisions among the Spaniards. Almagro put to death. His character.. 29

Chap. IV. Pizarro extends his conquests, subdues the province of Charcas, and sends his brother Gonzalo to make new discoveries. Orellana sails down the river of the Amazons, and returns to the Spanish settlements on the other side of the continent of America. Gonzalo returns to Quito 51

Chap. V. Pizarro's cruelty causes him to be assassinated. Almagro the younger proclaimed governor. Opposition to his authority. Vaca de Castro arrives from Spain, empowered to settle the disputes in Peru; is opposed by Almagro, whom he defeats; and Almagro, being taken, is executed, with many of his adherents 60

Chap. VI. De Castro's wise regulations. He is superseded by Blasco Nunez Vela, and put under arrest; Nunez is opposed by Gonzalo Pizarro, and imprisoned; but

Page

escaping, is killed in battle, and Gonzalo acknowledged governor. Pedro de la Gasca, appointed governor of Peru, arrives from Spain. His authority contested. Pizarro, defeated and abandoned, surrenders, and is beheaded. De Gasca, perplexed by the demands of his troops, returns in disgust to Spain 69

THE SETTLEMENT OF BRASIL.

Chap. I. The discovery of Brasil. The small advantages at first expected from it. An account of the country and its inhabitants; the manner in which it was at first settled by the Portuguese 79

Chap. II. Fruitless attempts of the French to settle a colony in Brasil 87

Chap. III. The Dutch make themselves masters of Brasil, but are expelled. Renewal of the attempt, with a formidable force. Obtain possession of the greatest part. Count Maurice of Nassau appointed governor. His prudent conduct, and settlement of the greatest part of the country 92

Chap. IV. Count Maurice forms a scheme for erecting a Dutch empire in America, equal to that of the Spaniards. General Brewer's expedition to Chili, and its miscarriage, occasioned by the ill conduct of the Dutch, and the recal of count Maurice 110

Chap. V. The Dutch West India company strip the country of the troops employed in its defence, and send new governors, who lessen the expences, increase the profits, but neglect the fortifications, and oppress the Portuguese. The expulsion of the Dutch 118

Chap. VI. The present state and produce of Brasil; the manner of making clayed sugar, and an account of the Brasil tree; the principal cities and towns of each province, and the discovery of gold and diamonds in that country 127

Chap. VII. An account of a people in Brasil called Paulists. A description of the manners of the inhabitants 137

Chap. VIII. An account of the vegetables, beasts, birds and reptiles, found in Brasil 145

THE DISCOVERIES OF THE ENGLISH IN AMERICA.

Page

Chap. I. The voyages of John Cabot, who first visited Newfoundland; and of Sebastian Cabot, for the finding out a north-west passage. Mr. Hore's attempt to establish a colony in Newfoundland. Captain Hawkins brings a Brasilian chief to England 155

Chap. II. Captain Drake's voyage to the isthmus of Darien. He takes the town of Nombre de Dios, marches over land for Panama, plunders Santa Cruz, lands at Rio Francisco, and seizes a great number of mules laden with gold and silver. His return to Plymouth 160

Chap. III. Sir Humphry Gilbert obtains a patent for settling the continent of North America. Takes formal possession of Newfoundland, but is lost on his return to England 172

Chap. IV. Sir Walter Raleigh gets the patent renewed, and sends two barks to make discoveries. The English land on the island of Wokoken, and trade with the natives. Unsuccessful attempts to establish a settlement in Virginia 176

Chap. V. Davis's voyages in search of a north-west passage; the discoveries made by him in North America 185

Chap. VI. Sir Walter Raleigh sails to discover Guiana: arrives at the island of Trinidad, and burns the town of St. Joseph; difficulties met with in his further progress; enters the great river Oroonoko, proceeds up the banks of the Caroli, takes a view of the country and of the cataracts of that river, is conducted to a mine, rejoins his ships, burns several Spanish towns, and returns to England 199

Chap. VII. Captain Leigh forms a settlement at Guiana; dies; his followers return. His brother sends supplies. A settlement formed in St. Lucia; its destruction. Captain Harcourt's voyage to Guiana 212

Chap. VIII. Sir Walter Raleigh's last voyage to Guiana. Captain Keymis's fruitless search of a gold mine. His engagement with the Spaniards. His death. Sir Walter returns to England, and is beheaded 220

Page

Chap. IX. The voyages of Captains Gosnold, Pringe, Gilbert and Weymouth, to the countries then called Virginia 228

Chap. X. Settlement of Virginia. Description of the climate, soil, beasts, birds, fishes, trees, plants, corn, and the manner of cultivating tobacco 235

Chap. XI. The first attempts of the Plymouth, or North-Virginia company. The manner in which New England was settled. Its situation and climate; animals, fowls, fish, and produce. A description of Boston, the capital 251

Chap. XII. The first settlement of the Bermuda or Summer-islands. An account of five persons who sailed from them in a boat to Ireland. A description of those islands, their plants and animals; their present state, inhabitants and government 266

Chap. XIII. Hudson's and Button's voyages for the discovery of a north-west passage 276

Chap. XIV. An account of the settlement and produce of Barbadoes 279

Chap. XV. The settlement of St. Christopher's, Nevis, Montserrat, Barbuda, Anguilla, and Antigua; their produce, &c. 284

Chap. XVI. The settlement of Maryland. Its climate, soil and produce 292

Chap. XVII. The conquest of Jamaica. Its description and productions; the manner in which indigo is prepared 298

Chap. XVIII. The manner in which Carolina was settled by the English. Its climate, soil and produce. The manner of preparing turpentine, resin, tar and pitch. The nature of their exports 307

Chap. XIX. The settlement of New York. A description of that province, and the trade of its inhabitants.... 314

Chap. XX. The settlement of the East and West Jerseys. Their produce and trade 318

Chap. XXI. The various settlements and revolutions in the Lucayan or Bahama islands 321

Chap. XXII. The settlements of the Hudson's-bay company. Religion, manners and customs of the Indians; the plants and animals, particularly the beaver..... 326

Chap. XXIII. The settlement of Pensylvania. Its rivers, climate, produce, principal towns and commerce 336

Chap. XXIV. The motives and plan for settling the province of Georgia. The first colony sent under the direc-

Page

tion of Mr. Oglethorpe. His proceedings. The number, situation and importance of the towns and forts in this province. A description of the country 344

Chap. XXV. An account of Nova Scotia from its first discovery to its complete settlement 360

DISCOVERIES AND SETTLEMENTS OF THE FRENCH.

Chap. I. Voyages made to America, by John Verazzano, in the reign of Francis I. The first establishment of the French on the banks of the river St. Lawrence. Description of Canada; its lakes, rivers and cataracts .. 369

Chap. II. A description of Isle-royal, or Cape Breton, and of Louisburg, its capital..... 380

Chap. III. Settlements made by the French in the Leeward islands 384

Chap. IV. Formation of the French settlements in the islands of Tortuga and Hispaniola, or St. Domingo. The progress and trade of that colony. A description of the small island of Avache, and the island of Cayenne; its productions and commerce,..... 389

Chap. V. Mr. De la Salle attempts to discover the great river Mississippi, and is murdered by his own soldiers; its settlement afterwards by Mr. d'Ibberville, and the affair turned into a bubble. A description of this river, and of the adjacent countries 398

DISCOVERIES AND SETTLEMENTS OF THE DUTCH.

Chap. I. The manner in which Surinam was taken by the Dutch. The commodities brought from thence; a description of the country, its fruits, plants and animals. Manners of the Indian inhabitants 405

Chap. II. An account of the islands of Tobago, St. Eustatia, Saba, St. Martin, Curacao, Bonairo and Aruba .. 411

DANISH SETTLEMENTS IN AMERICA.

A short description of the islands of St. Thomas and St. Croix, in the possession of the Danes 421

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES

OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

A Brasilian Prince introduced to King Henry VIII. .....Frontispiece.
Pizarro entertained on shore by a Peruvian Lady .....Page 8
Pizarro assassinated 62
The Brasilians and their Houses..... 83
The Dutch seize St. Salvador..... 93
The Dutch defeat a party of Spaniards 112
Admiral Lichthart, with four ships, a frigate, and a bark, attacks the Portuguese fleet of seventeen sail 123
Captain Drake seizes the Spanish treasures near Rio Francisco 169
Sir Walter Raleigh taking possession of Virginia 176
Captain Davis's first interview with the North American Indians 188
Sir Walter Raleigh takes the city of St. Joseph, and sets five Caciques, who were chained together, at liberty 200
The Natives attack the English in their settlements 216
Indians dancing round an English boy playing upon the guitar 231
Massassoiet, the Great Sachem, entertained by Captain Standish 254
Venables taking possession of Jamaica 298
Beavers building their Huts..... 334
Indian Chiefs introduced to King George I. 350

CATHEDRAL LIBRARY,
A. M. D. G.
111 E. 50TH STREET,
NEW YORK CITY.

THE

WORLD DISPLAYED.

THE CONQUEST OF PERU,

BY

FRANCIS PIZARRO.

CHAP. I.

Francis Pizarro undertakes the discovery of Peru; obtains a particular account of its immense riches, and returns to Panama, where, being opposed by the governor, he embarks for Spain.

IT has been already mentioned, that Vasquez Nunez de Balboa was the first Spaniard who formed the project of making discoveries in the South Sea; and the desire of wresting the execution of it out of his hands, was the principal motive that induced Pedrarias to take away his life. But when all the expeditions undertaken by this cruel monster had failed, three persons, in the year 1524, offered to engage in this undertaking at their own expence, provided they might be allowed fair and equitable terms. To this proposal Pedrarias readily listened, believing that he ran no hazard in complying with their request, since, if they miscarried, he should lose nothing; and, if they succeeded, he hoped that he should be able to secure to himself the fruits of their enterprise.

The principal of these three persons was Francis Pizarro, who has been already mentioned. He was a native of Truxillo, a town in the province of Estramadura in Spain; some of the Spanish writers say he was a nobleman by birth, while others maintain that he was the illegitimate son of Gonzalo Pizarro, an officer at Truxillo, who suffered him to be exposed as a foundling at a church-door; however, being discovered to be the father, he was obliged to support him; but giving him no manner of education, he made him spend his youth in the most servile offices, particularly in keeping his hogs. Young Pizarro at length ran away from the herd, and, entering on board a ship, sailed to the West Indies, where he distinguished himself in the wars of Hispaniola and Cuba, by his bold and enterprising disposition, and obtained a commission; he sailed with Hojeda to the Gulf of Darien, and afterwards served under Nunez de Balboa, but having acquired a handsome fortune, had, on the first building of Panama, settled in that city, where he seemed disposed to spend the remainder of his life in peace, until the thirst of gold incited him to engage in this undertaking, and afterwards prompted him to commit actions, that rendered him a disgrace to human nature.

The second of these adventurers was Diego de Almagro, who took his name from the place of his birth; for his origin was so obscure, that no historian has been able to discover who was his father.

The third was Ferdinando de Luques, or, as he is sometimes called, de Lugne, who, as well as both the former, was advanced in years. This man, who was a priest, had much the largest fortune; he was proprietor of the island of Tobago, had a good

estate besides, and a considerable sum in ready money.

This partnership made much noise, as nothing could be more singular than for three private men to raise a joint stock for conquering a great empire; and this, like other projects, was treated as a wild and visionary scheme, that would infallibly end in the ruin of the projectors: but, without regarding the opinions of the world, they solemnly promised each other, that no dangers nor disappointments should make them lay aside their enterprise; and that they would make an equal division of the wealth they should acquire, after having first deducted the emperor's dues, and all expences. They took care to make the best inquiries they could into the causes of all former miscarriages, in order the better to avoid them; and were very assiduous in finding out persons who had been employed in the preceding expeditions, that they might reap the benefit of their experience. To each of them was assigned a particular part in the conquest of Peru: Francis Pizarro was to command the party that went upon the discovery; Almagro was to carry him recruits, and to reinforce him from time to time; and Ferdinand de Luques was to stay at Panama, to provide ammunition and provisions for the use of those engaged in the expedition.

About the middle of November, 1524, Pizarro embarked in a new ship with 114 men, officers included, and proceeded to an island about five leagues distant from Panama, whence he sailed to the Pearl islands in the midst of the bay, where he took in wood and water, and then proceeding a hundred leagues to the southward, landed at Port Pinas, upon the continent, on the south side of the bay of

Panama, where he endeavoured to penetrate into the country; but the people having fled from their habitations, and meeting with nothing but bogs and mountains, without any prospect of provisions, he proceeded farther down the coast; but finding there the same inconveniences, and perceiving the rainy season coming on, and that many of his men died by sickness, fatigue, and want of provisions, he sent the ship to the Isle of Pearls, to procure fresh supplies.

Meanwhile Pizarro was joined by Almagro with two ships, and sixty recruits; when, notwithstanding the unhealthiness of the climate, they continued on the coast, and had many skirmishes with the natives, in one of which Almagro lost an eye; but happening, in some of their excursions, to meet with gold to the value of about 15,000 crowns, they resolved, in spite of all the hazards and difficulties they encountered, to proceed on the enterprise, to which they were encouraged by their pilot, who, while they were on shore, had run down as far as Cape Passaro, under the equator, where he seized some prisoners, who made him sensible that the treasures of Peru greatly surpassed whatever had been reported of them.

When the pilot returned with this agreeable news he found Pizarro greatly reduced, his money being exhausted, his men sick, and Almagro gone to Panama with the gold they had taken, to procure another reinforcement of troops and provisions.

Almagro raised 40 recruits, and having purchased some horses, arms, clothes, provisions and medicines, returned to Pizarro, where the greatest part of his men being sick or dead, they removed from that unhealthy part of the continent to the island of

Gallo, where, having staid about fifteen days, they ran still farther to the southward; but found the weather continue so bad, and the country so much under water, that Pizarro himself began to despair of success; and so violent was the dispute about continuing the enterprise, that the two commanders were on the point of drawing their swords; but at length it was agreed, that they should return to the island of Gallo, where Pizarro was to remain with his men, till Almagro went to Panama for recruits. Many of the soldiers desired to go along with him; but this was absolutely refused; and, as several of the soldiers had threatened to complain to the governor, that sending them on this expedition was devoting them to destruction, great care was taken to prevent their sending any letters. However, one of them found means to send a paper, subscribed by most of them, representing their hardships, and desiring to be recalled; which was so artfully inclosed in a bottom of cotton yarn, that it escaped the vigilance of the officers, and came safely to the hands of the new governor; for Pedrarias was now removed from his government, and succeeded by Pedro los Rios, who was so far from suffering Almagro to raise more recruits, that he sent a message with a commissary to the island of Gallo, to bring back all the men who survived.

The arrival of this ship greatly mortified Pizarro, who intreated the commissary to allow such of the men to stay with him as voluntarily chose it; which being granted, he drew a line with the point of his sword, and haranguing his men, told them they were at liberty, if they thought fit, to return to Panama; but he was grieved at the thought of their now abandoning so glorious a prospect, when they were

on the point of reaping the reward of all their sufferings. That, for his part, he would perish in the glorious undertaking, rather than desert it; and those who voluntarily staid should share with him the treasures which fell into his hands. He then desired those who were willing to proceed, to come over the line he had drawn. But so great were the sufferings of these poor people, that only thirteen men and a mulatto came over; while the rest, embarking with the commissary, returned to Panama.

Pizarro's affairs were now in a most wretched situation, for he was not only deprived of the hopes of performing any thing remarkable at present, but had a very indifferent prospect with respect to futurity. In this distress, which he concealed in his own breast, he retired with a few daring fellows, who resolved to follow his desperate fortune, to the island of Gorgona for a supply of water, and staid there till he was joined by Almagro, with a few volunteers, whom he had, with some difficulty, persuaded to engage in this expedition.

With these men they left Gorgona, and sailed along the coast till they found themselves in 30° south latitude, having spent about two years in a voyage, which, now the current and trade winds are known, is performed in as many weeks. In this passage, however, they took several Indian vessels of considerable value, and obtained such intelligence of the wealth of the coast, that Pizarro resolved to send Pedro de Candia, a man of good sense and agreeable address, to penetrate as far as he could into Tumbez, in order to learn whether the informations he had received were true.

Pedro rendered himself agreeable to the Indians, and by his good conduct was enabled to execute

his commission in the completest manner. He returned safe to Pizarro; assured him that the country exceeded all imagination; that the wealth and splendor of the people, and the grandeur of their public edifices were incredible, and that great art and skill were visible in these structures, which were so rich, that the very walls were covered with gold and silver.

Upon this report Pizarro called a council of his people, when, after much deliberation, it was resolved to return to Panama, and being enabled to give an account of the prodigious advantages to be reaped from an expedition made in a proper manner to Peru, it was to be hoped they should find people who were willing to embark in such an advantageous undertaking, and obtain such supplies as would ensure their success.

However, sailing a few leagues farther along the coast, they made Payta, to which Pizarro gave the name of Santa Cruz; and, finding this one of the best harbours they had observed on the coast of Peru, they cast anchor, and going ashore, found the natives extremely civil, and willing to take the trifles they had to give them, in exchange for provisions. They weighed from this place, leaving a Spaniard, named Alphonso de Molina, who had separated from them, on shore; but soon after returning, he came on board in one of the floats of that country, and told them that he had been entertained with great civility by a woman of distinction, who was very desirous of seeing the ship. Soon after the same woman sent other floats to pilot them into a safe part of the harbour; upon which Pizarro sent Molina, with three other gentlemen, to invite this Peruvian lady on board; and she

coming, he treated her in the most elegant manner his circumstances would admit. In return she invited Pizarro on shore, and the next morning, at his landing, received him with a great retinue, and conducted him and his attendants to an arbour; where she entertained him at dinner, and afterwards with several Peruvian diversions.

The Spaniards returning on board, sailed back for Panama, where Pizarro arrived towards the end of the year 1527, with several large pieces of gold, three Indian boys, whom he intended to educate for interpreters, and some Peruvian sheep. Those who had before ridiculed this expedition as absurd and ruinous, now confessed their error, and were desirous of partaking of its advantages; but Pizarro being opposed by the governor, who refused to allow his levying more men, and finding it necessary that he should be supported by authority superior to his own, he, with the consent of his colleagues, embarked for Spain, to solicit the emperor's protection, and such powers as were necessary for promoting their schemes.

CHAP. II.

Pizarro's favourable reception from Charles V. His return to Panama, and descent at Tumbez, where he defeats the inhabitants, seizes their riches, and builds a fort. State of Peru. The assistance of Pizarro sought by the contending parties. The inca Atabaliba is wantonly attacked, and taken prisoner. His army massacred. He is afterwards basely put to death.

PIZARRO arrived without any remarkable accident at Seville, whence he proceeded to the court of the emperor Charles V. where he met with a very

Pizarro, entertained on shore by a Peravian Lady.

Maguire Sculp.

Dublin, Published by J. Christie 17, Ross Lane

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

gracious reception, on presenting him with some Peruvians in their proper habits, several gold and silver vessels of the fashion of the country, and two or three Peruvian sheep. The emperor took great pleasure in hearing him relate the difficulties he had met with in his search for Peru, and referred him to the council of the Indies, who ordered him to proceed in the conquest of that empire, as far as 200 leagues to the southward of Tumbez, which is at the bottom of the bay of Guaiaquil. He also obtained the titles of governor and captain-general, with the offices of adelantado, or lieutenant, and of alguazile-major, or chief justice of Peru. This was directly contrary to his agreement with his partners; he having promised to obtain the second of these titles for Almagro, and the last for his pilot, who had served him with great fidelity and skill. However, he obtained for Ferdinando de Luques the title of protector-general of the Peruvians, with the emperor's promise of recommending him to the pope, to be made bishop of Tumbez, of which place Almagro was, however, nominated governor, with the title of Don; his bastard son was legitimated; besides, of the thirteen men who remained with Pizarro in his distress on the island of Gallo, those who were gentlemen, had the honour of knighthood; and such as were not, were raised to the rank of gentlemen.

These commissions were granted at Toledo, on the 26th of July, 1528, and six Dominican friars were ordered to go over with Pizarro, as missionaries, to assist in the conversion of the Peruvians; but though the emperor hoped to obtain considerable advantages from this expedition, he did not advance a single piece of money for the service.

Pizarro having thus settled the affairs which brought him to Spain, paid a visit to Truxillo, the place of his birth, where he found that his father had been many years married to a woman of a good family, and had three sons grown up to man's estate, Ferdinand, Gonzalo and Juan; and that his mother had been married to a farmer, by whom she had a son named Francis Martin de Alcantara; these entered into his service, embarked with him at Seville, and safely arrived at Nombre de Dios on the coast of Terra Firma; from whence he marched with his people over land to the city of Panama, where Almagro was so disgusted at his having engrossed all the honour and authority to himself, that he refused to assist him in the intended expedition, till Pizarro promised to relinquish the title of adelantado, and to give him an equal share in whatever they should acquire. Upon which concession, Almagro agreed to assist him as formerly; but though he, for the present, smothered his resentment, he never heartily forgave him.

Three ships being prepared at Panama, on board of which were one hundred and twenty-five soldiers, thirty-seven horses, with arms, ammunition and stores, Pizarro set sail from thence; but meeting with contrary winds, he found it impossible to keep the sea, with his horses on board, and therefore came to an anchor above one hundred leagues to the northward of Tumbez, at a place which he called St. Matthew's Bay. He had here the inhumanity to attack the natives without the least provocation, and to make many of them prisoners; when the rest flying into the country, he plundered their towns, in which he found immense treasures: for these people, conscious of having given no of-

fence, had no suspicion of the Spaniards, and therefore took no care of hiding any thing from them.

By this cruel conduct Pizarro soon became distressed for want of provisions; and losing many of his men by sickness, and the hardships they endured in marching through bogs, and thickets of mangroves, his forces were greatly diminished; besides many of his people contracted a kind of disorder, which they imputed to the water they drank being poisoned; for their faces and bodies were suddenly covered with warts, that were extremely painful, and when they were cut off, some of the men bled to death. He now too late perceived his error, in not courting the friendship of the natives; and being in no condition to attempt the conquest of Peru with the forces he had left, sent back his ships to Panama to raise more recruits. He also sent to the same place 30,000 pesoes in gold, with a great number of emeralds; and might have sent many more, had it not been for the folly of some of his people, who were so stupid as to break them in pieces with hammers, in order to try if they were not as hard as diamonds.

Francis Pizarro resolved to continue in action till the arrival of his recruits, and, having in some measure informed himself of the state of the country, thought he might take some advantage of the disputes which subsisted between the Tumbezenes and the inhabitants of Puna, a neighbouring island, by making friends of the latter. He therefore continued his march towards Tumbez, keeping the sea still in sight, till coming near the above island, he passed over to it with his men; however, disagreeing with these islanders, he attacked and

routed them. This he flattered himself would have opened a way for his contracting a close alliance with the Tumbezenes; because finding six hundred of the latter, with one of the most considerable persons of the city, prisoners to the inhabitants of Puna, he sent them to Tumbez, with three of his own people. But, if the Spanish writers are to be credited, the Tumbezenes had the ingratitude and cruelty, to sacrifice these three men to their idols; however, as Pizarro was ignorant of this circumstance, he still regarded the Tumbezenes as his allies, upon whose assistance he might constantly depend.

In the mean time, Almagro sending Pizarro a reinforcement from Panama, and Ferdinand de Soto, and other adventurers, also arriving with troops from Nicaragua, he thought himself in a condition to carry on the war upon the continent, especially as he had some reason to expect, that he should be supported by the Tumbezenes. Accordingly, having provided a sufficient number of floats, he transported his troops to Tumbez; but lost some of his men on his landing, some floats being overset by the surf which beat on the shore, and, to his great surprise, several of his people were attacked and cut off by his supposed friends.

The Spanish writers have given different reasons for this behaviour in the Tumbezenes: some relate, that the natives observing that the Spaniards had enslaved the inhabitants of Puna, subverted their religion and government, demolished their temples, and every thing they held sacred, expected to be treated in the same manner, and therefore thought themselves justified in taking every advantage of them. But others inform us, that while the Spa-

niards were engaged in the reduction of Puna, a very great alteration happened in the affairs of the continent: Atahualpa, or, as he is generally called, Atabaliba, had defeated the forces of his brother Huescar, the emperor, cut in pieces most of the inhabitants of Tumbez, and the neighbouring provinces, for adhering to him; and that the troops which opposed Pizarro's landing in Tumbez, were those detached by Atabaliba to that province, in order to repel the invasion of the Spaniards.

But whatever were the motives of their opposing the descent of these strangers, they were thrown into such confusion by the Spanish horse and artillery, that they fled as the Spaniards advanced; and, after several thousands of them had been slaughtered, were forced to abandon not only the city and castle, but even the whole valley of Tumbez, and to leave behind them all their gold and silver plate, emeralds, pearls, and other rich spoils, which lay heaped up in the temple of the Sun and the inca's palace, and were of such immense value, that the Spaniards could scarcely believe their eyes, on their finding them so suddenly in their possession; and so great was the consternation of the inca Atabaliba, and his whole court, when the fugitives related the slaughter made by the thunderer's ordnance, and the impossibility of escaping the Spanish horses, that they concluded, if the Spaniards were not gods, as they at first conjectured, they were certainly devils, and that it was impossible for any human force to oppose them.

Pizarro soon received intelligence of the terror he had spread through the inca's court, of which he resolved to take advantage as soon as possible. He, however, thought proper to defer his march,

till he had erected a slight fortress, that might serve him as a place of retreat and security, and in which the recruits he expected might be quartered. He accordingly built one upon the sea coast, and gave it the name of St. Michael. This was performed in the year 1531, and was the first Spanish colony planted in Peru.

The forming of this settlement was certainly a very prudent step, and there was no place on the whole coast so properly situated for it as that chosen by Pizarro. His next step was also the wisest he could possibly have taken, for he made an equal division of all the gold and silver in his possession, giving notes for it, payable at Panama, to those who were to accompany him in the future conquest, while he delivered to such as remained behind in the new colony their whole shares without abatement. By this establishment he plainly discovered his intention to remain in the country, which it was evident he could not do but by force; and therefore the news of his erecting a fortified town, and compelling the Indians who lived near it to obey not only him, but the meanest of the Spaniards, soon spread through the whole empire, and engaged the two brothers, who were contending for the throne, to turn their eyes upon those who might soon have the empire at their disposal. But as the disputes between these two brothers proved their ruin, and the chief cause that brought this great empire under subjection to the Spaniards, some account of the affairs of Peru is necessary, to render this history perfectly intelligible.

The inca, or emperor Guayanacapa was distinguished by many virtues; but being ambitious, and generally successful in war, made several con-

siderable additions to his dominions, and in particular subdued the province of Quito; to confirm his title to which, he married the daughter of the late sovereign, and by her had a son called Atahualpa or Atabaliba, to whom at his death he bequeathed the crown of Quito, on account of its being independent of the dominions of the incas, and its descending to him in right of his mother. But Huescar, Guayanacapa's eldest son, who succeeded to his father's hereditary dominions, insisted upon Atabaliba's surrendering the kingdom of Quito, promising, in return, to give him a share of his father's treasures, and to assign him lands for his subsistence. Atabaliba refused to consent to this proposal; but offered to pay homage to his brother Huescar for the crown.

In consequence of this dispute, both parties had recourse to arms, and a general engagement ensued which lasted for three days, and was as bloody as it was obstinate. At length the forces of Atabaliba were defeated, and he himself taken prisoner; but while the guards were immersed in their rejoicings and festivals which followed the victory, he found means to break a hole through the wall of the house wherein he was confined, by which he made his escape, and returned to his own subjects, whom he found dispirited by their last defeat. He, however, soon revived their courage, by assuring them that his father had appeared to him in prison, and by changing him into a serpent, had given him an opportunity of sliding through a little hole in the wall.

What to a sensible people would appear ridiculous, is, to a superstitious and credulous multitude, a miracle. This story instantly spread through the

whole empire: the people in general took up arms in his defence, and he had soon a much larger body of forces than ever. He now defeated two or three armies that opposed him, levelled with the ground the place where he had been imprisoned, and on his arrival at Tumbez attempted to make himself master of the island of Puna, but without success; when leaving that island, he marched with all his forces to give Huescar battle, who was advancing towards him with a prodigious army. Atabaliba hearing of his approach, sent two of his best officers with three or four thousand light armed troops to observe his brother's strength, who on their drawing near to Huescar's camp, struck out of the high road to avoid being discovered.

At this very instant Huescar, with some of his chief courtiers and principal officers, had retired into the same bye road to shun the noise and bustle of his army; when Atabaliba's men observing the royal standard, laid hold of this opportunity of putting a speedy end to the war, and immediately attacking Huescar, defeated his guards, and made him prisoner.

These victors were however soon in as much danger as the vanquished, for Huescar's army being informed of what had passed, surrounded this handful of men, and threatened to cut them instantly in pieces. In this extremity they told Huescar, that if he did not immediately order his army to retire, they would cut off his head, after which they were determined to die upon the spot. At the same time they observed, that he need be under no apprehension from his confinement, since all Atabaliba required was, the permission to enjoy his own kingdom of Quito, which being secured to

him, he was too generous to detain him. On this Huescar ordered his principal officers to draw off their forces to Cuzco, where the incas kept their court, and this command was immediately obeyed.

Affairs were in this situation when Pizarro entered Peru. He was first solicited to assist Huescar; but answered in general terms that he was on his march to assist the distressed, and see justice impartially administered. He was afterwards honoured with a solemn embassy from Atabaliba, to desire his alliance and friendship. Upon which he immediately resolved to visit that prince at Caxamalca, where he then was. The Spaniards, in their way thither, suffered extremely by marching through a parched barren desert, that was about twenty leagues over, after which they entered into a rich fertile country, where they staid to refresh themselves, and then continued their journey.

The Spaniards were soon after met by other ambassadors, who came to compliment Pizarro, and to present him, in the name of the incas, with a pair of gold buskins richly ornamented, and bracelets of the same metal, set with emeralds, which he was desired to put on, at his obtaining an audience of Atabaliba, who, by seeing his own presents, would easily know him. These ambassadors also made him several other valuable presents, and brought with them great plenty of provisions, which were much wanted by the army.

The chief of this embassy was of the race of the incas, and behaved with great politeness, which the Spaniards attributed to fear; in which they were partly right, though the dread did not arise so much from their arms as from a religious motive; for they superstitiously imagined, that the Spaniards

were the descendants of the Sun. They had an old tradition, which had been universally received, that the elder son of their incas, who had lived many ages before, had seen a strange kind of phantom, who called himself Viracocha, or offspring of the Sun. His dress and appearance were entirely different from that of the Peruvians, who have no beards, and whose clothes reached no lower than their knees; but this phantom had a long beard, a garment of a very unusual make, which reached down to his feet, and he led in his hand an animal that was absolutely unknown to the young prince. This tradition was so universally believed, and so firmly rooted in the minds of the Peruvians, that they no sooner saw a Spaniard with a beard, his legs covered, and holding his horse by the bridle, than they cried out, 'See, there is the inca Viracocha, or, the son of the Sun!' This opinion, joined to the dissensions between the two brothers, greatly facilitated Pizarro's conquests.

The Spaniards, on their arrival at Caxamalca, found that Atabaliba had retired to a place at a small distance; upon which the general sent to him his brother Ferdinand Pizarro, and Ferdinand Soto, in quality of ambassadors. They were received with very great ceremony, and immediately introduced to the royal presence, which struck the Spaniards with joy and reverence; for not only the inca, but all who were with him, glittered with gold and jewels.

As soon as the Spaniards approached Atabaliba, who was seated in a chair of massive gold, they saluted him in the Spanish fashion; with which appearing well pleased, he arose and embraced them; and a golden chair being brought for each,

they sat down, and were served by two beautiful princesses, in vessels of gold set with emeralds. They had afterwards a collation of fruit, which being over, Ferdinand Pizarro, by means of a wretched interpreter brought from Puna, endeavoured to impress the inca with a favourable idea of his intentions and objects. To this the inca, they supposed, made a pathetic reply, as he drew tears from the eyes of those who understood him, and concluded with telling them, that he would come the following day to hold a personal conference with their general, They could collect but little from his discourse; and from the absurd manner in which their interpreter explained what the inca had said, they had reason to believe that he received but a very imperfect explanation of Ferdinand Pizarro's oration.

Francis Pizarro being informed of this intended visit, divided his cavalry, which amounted to sixty men, into three troops of twenty each, and posted them behind an old wall; and having put himself at the head of his infantry, which amounted to only one hundred men, waited for the coming of Atabaliba, who advanced in regular order with his army, which was divided into four battalions consisting of eight thousand men each. As soon as they drew near, the inca, addressing himself to his officers, said, 'These people are messengers of the Gods, let us be seen to do nothing to offend them; but, on the contrary, use our utmost endeavours to gain them by civilities.'

Some Spaniards, observing an Indian idol upon a tower, richly adorned with gold, silver and precious stones, began to plunder it, in which they were at first opposed by the Peruvians, till the inca,

whose command was to them equal to a divine law, cried out, that 'They should do nothing to offend the Children of the Sun.' The perfidious Spaniards, however, instantly attacking the natives, committed a most dreadful slaughter, and the horse suddenly sallying out, bore down all before them; the Peruvians falling tame sacrifices to their treachery, without making the least resistance. Pizarro, putting himself at the head of his horse, advanced in person to seize Atabaliba, and laying hold of his robe, dragged him from the chariot, in which he sat on the shoulders of his attendants. At which instant, one of the Spaniards attempting to strike the inca with his sword, wounded Pizarro, which was all the Spanish blood spilt at this scene of cool, merciless slaughter, in which about 5000 Indians were inhumanly massacred, without attempting to use the weapons they held in their hands; for they thought every command of the inca a part of their religion, though it was attended with the loss of their lives. Their principal attention was fixed on their prince, and many of them died, while eagerly endeavouring to support his chariot, to which the inca clung while the cruel and treacherous Pizarro dragged him from it. This massacre was committed on the 3d of May, 1533.

When this horrid scene was over, Pizarro caused the inca to be conveyed to his own quarters, and directed that the spoils of the field should be brought before him, which consisted of large gold and silver vessels, fine garments, jewels and ornaments belonging to the inca, the royal family and great officers. There were also taken many of the women of quality, and some of the consecrated virgins. That very day Pizarro impiously directed, that

thanksgivings to God should be offered, on the very spot where the earth was covered with the dead bodies of the Peruvians they had thus inhumanly murdered and plundered.

The next day Pizarro sent a detachment of his forces to plunder the inca's camp, where it took an immense quantity of riches, though the Peruvian generals are said to have removed three thousand loads of gold and silver before the Spaniards arrived there. To induce the natives not to carry off, or conceal any more of their treasures, Pizarro caused it to be proclaimed, that the inca was alive, and that they were at liberty to come and wait upon him as usual; on which many of the generals and great officers returned to Caxamalca, to attend their captive sovereign. He also caused the inca's women to brought to him; and suffered him to be served in the same manner as before his misfortunes, though he kept him in fetters, at which the inca could not forbear showing his resentment.

Atabaliba observing the insatiable thirst of the Spaniards after gold and silver, and being very desirous of liberty, made them an offer of filling a large room in the castle of Caxamalca with these metals, as high as an ordinary man could reach his hand; a proposal which amazed the Spaniards, and which they gladly accepted. For this purpose he desired that some Spanish officers might be sent with his own people to Cuzco and other cities, to fetch the treasures deposited there, and, at the same time issued his orders, that the Spaniards, who were dispatched to those places, should be hospitably entertained in the countries through which they passed, and receive all the assistance his subjects could give them.

In the mean time Almagro having enlisted 150 men at Panama, had embarked with them for Peru, in order to reinforce Pizarro, but had been obliged by contrary winds to land at Cape Francisco, where he was joined by another party of the Spaniards, who were going to share Pizarro's fortune; by which means his whole body amounted to between two and three hundred; but having lost by sickness and fatigue about thirty or forty of his men, he at length arrived at the Spanish colony of St. Michael's, where he was informed that Pizarro had made the emperor Atabaliba prisoner, and taken possession of a vast treasure; when, fearing that he would refuse him his dividend, he consulted his officers, whether they should not proceed in quest of some new discovery, independently of Pizarro. A faithful account of this deliberation being privately dispatched to Pizarro, by Almagro's secretary, he immediately sent several very obliging messages to Almagro, to assure him of his integrity, and to invite him to join him; at the same time he let him know, that there were some people who endeavoured to sow divisions between them, and intreated him to be on his guard, as that might end in the ruin of one or both of them, as well as the destruction of their enterprise; and, to support this advice, sent him the letter he had received from the secretary, which Almagro no sooner saw, than he caused him to be hanged.

The report of Almagro's arrival increased Atabaliba's solicitude about his liberty, for he wisely judged, that the insolence of the Spaniards would be augmented in proportion to their strength; he therefore hastened the bringing in of the treasure he had offered for his ransom, that he might obtain

his liberty before Pizarro was joined by Almagro; but another accident happened about the same time, which, he apprehended, might prove still more fatal to him; for the Spanish officers who were sent with his people to Cuzco, happening to pass through the town where Huescar, his brother, was confined in prison, went to see him, and told him what Atabaliba had offered for his ransom; when that prince replied, that he had been unjustly deposed by his brother, who had no right either to the empire, or the treasures he had promised; and that, as he had heard one principal design of their coming was, to relieve the distressed, he did not doubt but they would release him from his captivity, and restore him to his throne, which he should not only gratefully acknowledge, but would give them more treasure than it was in the usurper's power to bestow; for his loyal subjects had buried most of their gold and silver on his being made prisoner, but would readily produce it again, and pay it for his ransom.

Pizarro's messengers listened to his overtures, and promised the inca that justice should be done him; however, they left that prince in prison, and continued their journey to Cuzco. Meanwhile Atabaliba being informed of these overtures, resolved to put his brother to death; but reflecting that the Spaniards might make this a pretence for taking away his own life, he resolved to sound Pizarro on the subject, which he did, by informing him, with the appearance of much affection and concern, that his brother had been murdered. Finding that Pizarro was not at all moved at this news, and only replied, that this was the fortune of war, and that the lives of captives were at the con-

queror's disposal, he dispatched an express for putting Huescar to death; his orders were immediately executed, but in what manner is still doubtful, some affirming that he was drowned, and others that his body was cut into small bits, to prevent his subjects paying the usual honours to his corpse. It is reported, that when the murderers appeared before Huescar, and let him know their business, he expressed himself in these terms: "It is true my reign is short; but the person by whose order I am put to death, who was born, and ought to have continued my subject, will not long enjoy that power, which he endeavours to purchase at the expence of the blood of his brother and lawful prince."

His death was no sooner known than the Peruvians made great lamentations, and cried to heaven for vengeance on his murderers. It is even said, that some desired the Spaniards to revenge it. Meanwhile the officers who were sent to Cuzco were, on their arrival there, adored by the people as the true descendants of the sun; but they soon perceived that they ought to deduce their original from a baser fountain; and they were afflicted to find that so profligate a race of men, who trampled upon every thing they held sacred, and whose avarice seemed to exceed all bounds, should become the masters of their country, and from that time they meditated how they might throw off the intolerable yoke they perceived the Spaniards were about to lay upon them. They durst not, however, disobey the commands of Atabaliba, but having amassed a considerable quantity of treasure, they sent it to Caxamalca, probably with a view of asserting their liberties to greater advantage when

they should have procured their inca's release.

Pizarro being informed that a great quantity of gold, silver and emeralds, was lodged in the temple of the invisible god, he dispatched his three brothers thither with the Peruvian officers deputed by Atabaliba; but the priests of this deity being informed that some of their temples had been ruined by the Spaniards, endeavoured to prevent their suffering the like misfortune, by sending away 400 carriers loaded with gold, silver and jewels, before the Spaniards arrived, which were either buried in the earth, or carried to such a distance that the Spaniards could never discover them. Ferdinand Pizarro, however, found as much plate in this temple as amounted to 9000 crowns, besides what was embezzled by the soldiers.

Almagro being by this time advanced into the neighbourhood of Caxamalca, Pizarro went out to meet him, and received him with all possible marks of affection and esteem, offering him such a share in the spoils as made him perfectly easy. But his soldiers, who expected to divide the booty with those who had served under Pizarro, were ready to mutiny on their being told, that they were entitled to no part of it; but they were soon appeased by Pizarro's agreeing to distribute 100,000 ducats among them. The rest of the plunder, after the emperor's fifth was deducted, was divided by Pizarro among his officers and soldiers; and it is said, that after he had reserved the inca's golden chair for his own use, he distributed as much gold and silver plate among the soldiers, as amounted to above 1,500,000 crowns; which, considering the value of gold and silver at that time, was more than 15,000,000 of crowns now. But, as large as this

sum appears in round numbers, it will yet be found more extraordinary and surprising, if we consider among how small a number of men it was divided.*

Ferdinand Pizarro was now chosen as the fittest person to go to Europe, and wait on the emperor Charles V. with his share of the treasure; when about sixty of the private men insisted upon their discharge, that they might go home, and peaceably enjoy the wealth they had obtained; but this was violently opposed by Almagro, and most of the council, who alledged it would greatly weaken their little army. But Francis Pizarro over-ruled this opposition, by observing, that nothing could be more political than allowing them to return home; for, as the meanest soldier would depart so very rich, they might be certain of gaining ten men for every one they lost.

Ferdinand Pizarro, before his departure, went to take his leave of Atabaliba, with whom he was in greater esteem than any of the Spanish officers: the emperor therefore was much concerned at his departure, and said, "My lord, you are going home, which is certainly matter of joy to you, though it fills me with grief; for I already apprehend, that, before your return, the man with one eye, meaning Almagro, and the other with the great belly, which was the king's treasurer, will put an end to my life: let us then take our last farewel."

His conjecture was indeed just, for the Spaniards, who had been sent for the rest of Atabaliba's ran-

* It appears from good memoirs, that upon this division, each horseman had to his share near 2000 ounces of gold, and the meanest soldier the value of £2000 sterling, and that even some of the foot had twice that sum.

som, making a report of the prodigious quantities of gold they had brought, and the reasons they had for believing that much greater were concealed, Almagro gave it as his opinion, that they should wait no longer, but dispatch the inca, and then make as much haste as possible to get into their possession all the gold in Peru; a cruel resolution, which, though Francis Pizarro at first seemed to reject with horror, he afterwards gave it his approbation, on account of his being treated with some degree of contempt by Atabaliba, and his giving a visible preference to other officers in the Spanish army, the reason of which is very singular, and cannot fail of giving pleasure to the judicious reader.

Atabaliba was a prince of great penetration, and therefore laboured to obtain as perfect a knowledge as possible of the manners, customs, and abilities of the Spaniards, in order that he might be the better able to deal with them, if, upon the payment of the sum proposed for his ransom, they should actually restore him to liberty. What particularly puzzled him, and seemed most unaccountable, was their having the art of writing and reading; he not being able to comprehend whether it was a natural endowment, or was acquired by labour and application. In order to obtain satisfaction, he asked one of the Spanish soldiers, whether he could express the name of God upon his thumb-nail: the man readily answered that he could, and accordingly wrote it; after which the inca went to several of the captains and soldiers, and shewing them his thumb-nail, asked if they knew what that mark signified? and from their answers, began to entertain an opinion, that reading and writing were

natural to the nation; but Francis Pizarro falling in his way, he asked him the same question, when being able neither to read nor write, he blushed, and turned away without resolving the question; which not only changed Atabaliba's opinion, with respect to these accomplishments, which he now plainly saw were the fruits of education; but gave him a very low opinion of the general, whose original he was persuaded must have been but mean, since he was in this respect exceeded in knowledge by the poorest of his soldiers.

His contempt for Pizarro, however, laid the foundation of his ruin, which was completed by the villainy of the wretched interpreter already mentioned, who, falling in love with one of Atabaliba's wives, that monarch was so incensed, that he let Pizarro know, that the fellow deserved to be put to death, which the general turned into jest. Upon this the interpreter resolved to be revenged; and accused the inca of contriving the destruction of the Spaniards, when the general ordered that this wild and ridiculous story should be digested into a formal accusation; commissioners were appointed to try Atabaliba, and the following charge was with great formality brought against him. That the late inca being his eldest brother and lawful sovereign, and himself a bastard, he had caused him to be deposed and imprisoned, and afterwards usurped his throne. That he had caused his said brother to be murdered. That Atabaliba was an idolater. That he caused his subjects to sacrifice men and children. That he had raised unjust wars, and had been guilty of the blood of many people. That he kept a great many concubines. That he had exacted taxes and tribute of

the Peruvians, since the Spaniards were come into possession of his country, and had even consumed and embezzled the public treasure; and that he had incited the natives to rebel and make war against the Spaniards since he had been their prisoner.

Upon these absurd and ridiculous articles, this sovereign prince was tried, in the midst of his own dominions, by the invaders of his country, and strangled. However, in justice to the rest of the Spaniards, it ought to be observed, that almost all the persons of family and distinction in the army declared against this vile proceeding, and even delivered a protest in writing against it. There are some who have pretended, though without any proof, that the Indians insisted upon Atabaliba's death, to retaliate that of his brother Huescar; but it appears that there is not the least foundation for such an assertion; for after Huescar's death, Atabaliba was universally acknowledged as the lawful inca throughout the whole empire; and, on his being murdered by the Spaniards, the Peruvians began every where to act offensively against them, which they had never done before.

CHAP. III.

The divided state of Peru. Manco Capac acknowledged inca. Pedro de Alverado enters Peru; is induced to retire. Pizarro lays the foundations of Lima and Truxillo. Almagro attempts the conquest of Chili. His failure. The government of Cuzco attacked by the natives. Divisions among the Spaniards. Almagro put to death. His character.

THE events, that followed the death of the inca Atabaliba, plainly show, that human nature is the

same in all countries and climates; and, that whilst some are actuated by principles of honor, and love to their country, others regulate their conduct by views of ambition. Rumnavi, one of Atabaliba's generals, who had escaped from the bloody slaughter at Caxamalca, with the rear-guard of the army, seized upon the province of Quito, and no sooner heard of his sovereign's death, than he cut to pieces such of the officers as he believed firmly attached to his late master; while Quisquis, another of his generals, who had been Huescar's executioner, attempted, with a still larger army, to secure part of the province of Cuzco; yet had so little bravery, that he fled before a handful of Spaniards who were sent in pursuit of him: but a few of these pushing too far, and falling into his hands, he caused them to be put to death.

This general, justly apprehending that it would be impossible for him to maintain himself against the Spaniards, contrived to get into his power, a younger brother of the inca, whose name was Pallu, whom he attempted to persuade to take the title of emperor. This young prince, however, discovered a greatness of soul, worthy of the highest praise; for he told Quisquis, that he scorned to derive that authority from the misery of the empire, which he could not hope for in better times; and esteemed it far more honorable to be esteemed a good man, than a bad monarch. He then repaired to Pizarro, and told him, that the true heir of the empire was Manco Capac, his eldest brother; and, that if, as he pretended, he proposed to do justice, and to protect those who had right on their side, he ought to declare in favour of that prince, who had a good army; and, with the assistance of the Spaniards,

would infallibly restore the lustre of the imperial diadem.

We can scarce form an idea of a country, in a worse situation than Peru was now in; or a nation in greater distraction than its inhabitants. They were dispirited with superstitious fears of the Spaniards, which prevented their considering their own strength; and, on the other hand, were divided into different factions, headed by different princes, at a time when union alone was absolutely necessary for their preservation. Pizarro, after having gratified his resentment, thought fit to treat the corpse of Atabaliba with the respect due to a sovereign prince: he celebrated his funeral with great solemnity, and went into mourning for him; but he soon discovered how detestable this murder rendered him in the opinion of the natives. The two factions instantly united against him, under Manco Capac, the brother and heir of Huescar, who was proclaimed inca at Cuzco. Pizarro then proclaimed Toparpa, the son of Atabaliba; caused him to wear the imperial coronet; to be treated with the same honours as his father, and issued such orders in his name as were for the interest of the Spaniards. This emperor, however, died soon after; when Pizarro, imagining that nothing could establish the dominion of the Spaniards in Peru, more than the possession of Cuzco, its capital, he began his march thither with all his forces, which consisted of near 400 men, besides such as were stiled confederate Indians.

Meanwhile Atauchi, brother to Atabaliba, having collected a large quantity of treasure, to purchase his brother's ransom, brought it to Caxamalca; but finding Atabaliba murdered, and the Spaniards

marched from thence, resolved to be revenged; and joining his forces with some of the Peruvian chiefs, surprised the Spaniards upon their march to Cuzco, killed some of them, and took several prisoners, among whom was Sanco de Cuellar, who had drawn up the process against Atabaliba, and attended his execution. With these prisoners the Peruvians returned to Caxamalca, where they caused De Cuellar to be strangled on the very spot where Atabaliba was put to death; but being informed that some of the prisoners had protested against the murder of the inca, they not only spared their lives, but dressed the wounded, and dismissed them with considerable presents, on their agreeing to the following articles. That all acts of hostility should be forgiven on both sides. That, for the future, peace should be inviolably maintained between the Peruvians and Spaniards. That the former should allow Manco Capac to ascend the throne of Peru. That such Peruvians as they held in chains, should be set at liberty. That no Peruvian should be loaded with fetters; and that the Spaniards should not treat them as slaves but as freemen, and be allowed to entertain Peruvians as hired servants. That the laws of their country, which were not repugnant to those of Christianity, should be inviolably preserved; and that this treaty should be ratified by the Spanish general and his sovereign.

Reasonable and generous as these articles were, on the side of the natives, Pizarro and Almagro positively refused to ratify them; and would hear of nothing but an absolute submission of their country and persons to the will of the Spaniards. Pizarro, therefore, continuing his march towards Cuzco, was again attacked at some difficult passes

in the mountains, by several parties of Peruvians: but finding themselves unable to resist the fire-arms and horses, they fled to Cuzco, declaring that it was in vain for any human force to oppose the invaders, who were armed with thunder and lightning; upon which the inhabitants fled, with whatever was most valuable, to the mountains. The Spaniards entered the city without opposition, in October 1532, and though the natives had time to carry off their goods, met with an immense treasure; and, as it was the custom of the country to bury with their great men the best part of the riches they possessed, these conquerors, who made no difficulty in rifling sepulchres, found as much wealth in the tombs as in the habitations of the living; whence the plunder of the city has been computed to amount at least to the full value of Atabaliba's ransom.

Pizarro having now made himself master of the capital, thought fit to invite the inhabitants to return to their dwellings; for he justly concluded, that, if the people were rendered desperate, the whole power of the empire might assemble against him. The Peruvians accepted this invitation, and returned to their houses; even the inca made some overtures, intimating that he would be content to embrace the Christian religion, and hold his dominions of the sovereign of the Spaniards, provided that neither he nor his subjects should be molested in their persons or properties. Pizarro giving him all possible encouragement, he came in person to Cuzco, where he was proclaimed inca, and invested with that dignity in the same manner as his predecessors, Pizarro at the same time agreeing to observe the articles already mentioned.

The Spaniards indeed found themselves under the necessity of taking these pacific measures, from their receiving intelligence, that all the southern provinces of Peru were assembling against them, in behalf of the inca Manco Capac; and from Pizarro's knowing that Rumnavi, Quisquis, and other Peruvian chiefs, had taken possession of Quito. These movements had compelled Pizarro, a little before, to send a considerable detachment, under the command of Sebastian Belancazar, to reinforce the colony at St. Michael's, and to make head against the Peruvian forces assembled at Quito.

Upon his arrival at St. Michael's, Belancazar found a large reinforcement of volunteers, come from different parts of the Spanish settlements, in order to obtain a share in the riches of Peru. Out of these he selected 120 foot and 80 horse, which he incorporated into his own army, and then marched directly towards Quito, to make himself master of the riches of the late emperor, most of which remained there. The Peruvian chief, who commanded in that province, did all that lay in his power to harrass and fatigue the Spanish army, without coming to a decisive action; but finding that Belancazar continued to advance directly towards the capital, he caused all the treasure of the emperor to be brought into the hall of the palace, set fire to it, and abandoned the city.

While Pizarro and his officers were thus employed in the reduction of several provinces of the empire, they were suddenly interrupted by an unexpected invasion of their countrymen. Don Pedro de Alverado, who had distinguished himself with Cortes in the conquest of Mexico, hearing of the

vast wealth obtained by these adventurers, was resolved to come in for a share; and, being possessed of the province of Guatimala, fitted out several ships. He also seized two vessels, that were fitting out in one of the ports of Nicaragua for the service of Pizarro. On board these ships he embarked five hundred horse and foot, which were as good troops as any in America; and, after enduring great hardships in the voyage, landed at Puerto Veja.

He then crossed a part of the Andes, near the equator, in which expedition his army also suffered greatly. After losing sixty of his men by the coldness of the weather, he arrived in the neighbourhood of St. Michael's, where he refreshed his troops, and was preparing for continuing his progress into the heart of the country, when he was met in the valley of Riobamba by a large body of troops, sent by Pizarro, under the command of Almagro, who had joined Belancazar. A battle now seemed inevitable; but Alverado, foreseeing the consequences that must attend an action, let victory remain on either side, willingly entered into a negotiation; and an agreement was made, that Alverado should return to his own government, in consideration of his being paid 100,000 pesoes of gold, to defray the expence of fitting out his fleet; and, that he should never attempt the invasion of Peru, during the lives of Pizarro or Almagro. It was also stipulated, that each party should be left at liberty to prosecute their separate discoveries, for their own advantage; by which means Alverado provided for such of the people as desired to remain in Peru. Alverado and Almagro then united their forces, and marched to Cuzco, in order to procure Pizarro's ratification of the treaty.

It is necessary to observe, that the peace between the new inca and Pizarro was concluded after Almagro had marched from Cuzco, and consequently he was at this time entirely ignorant of it; and that the confirmation of it had not yet reached Quisquis, who was encamped near Caxamalca, and waited in expectation of hearing it confirmed, with a good army, which he was then ready to disband, and therefore retired as the Spaniards advanced; but the two generals, seeing so numerous a body of forces, thought proper to attack them, and at first gained considerable advantage; for Quisquis had not the least suspicion, that they intended to come to an engagement. However, he secured a retreat to some neighbouring rocks, the steep accesses of which he defended with undaunted courage, and rolled down huge stones with such success as to kill several of the assailants, and particularly the horse. In this manner he defended himself till night, when he retired to the hills, but his rear being the next day attacked on the banks of a river, maintained a very difficult pass for many hours, and secured a safe retreat into the mountains, whence in a few days he made a sally with pretty good success, for though he had a considerable loss, his hopes were kept alive by having killed above fifty Spaniards.

Pizarro being informed of these transactions, resolved to prevent Alverado's visit, for he was a little doubtful whether the sight of Cuzco, and the rich country about it, might not revive Alverado's ambition. On his arrival at Caxamalca he had an interview with the Indian chiefs, in which he informed them of the treaty concluded with the inca Manco Capac and himself, and put an end to those feuds,

by assuring them, that his countrymen had been entirely ignorant of it, promising that from thenceforward all hostilities should cease. He afterwards met Alverado in the valley of Pacha Camac, embraced him with the appearance of great affection, and not only agreed to perform the articles stipulated by Almagro, but made him a present of 20,000 pesoes of gold, for the expence of his journey in coming to meet him, besides a great number of emeralds, turquoises, and vessels of gold curiously wrought, and ordered all his officers, during his stay, to look upon him as their commander.

Alverado, after he had sufficiently rested and refreshed himself, took his leave of the two generals, highly satisfied both with the treatment he had met with, and the treasures he had acquired. Almagro returned to Cuzco, while Pizarro remained to choose a proper place for founding a new city, which he at length built on the sea-coast, on the banks of the little river Lima, in 12° 30′ south latitude, 120 miles west of Cuzco. The first stone was laid on the 6th of January, 1534, and, from its being the feast of the Epiphany, he called the town Villa de los Reyes, or the City of Kings. This place is now the capital of Peru, and is known by the name of Lima. Pizarro having settled some of his people here, divided the neighbouring lands among them, and assigned a number of Indians to perform their drudgery. He then proceeded along the coast about 300 miles farther north, where he founded another city, which, from the place of his birth, he called Truxillo.

While Francis Pizarro was employed in building this last city, he received an account of his brother Ferdinand having, in a great measure, succeeded

in his negociation at the court of Spain; that he had procured for him the title of Marquis de los Atabillos, with the revenues of that province, and a large increase of territory, which was to be distinguished by the name of New Castile; that he had also obtained for Almagro the post of Marshal of Peru, and a government two hundred leagues in extent, to the southward of the country assigned to the marquis Pizarro; but, as to his demand of the vassalage of twenty thousand Indians, the emperor refused to grant it, until he was informed of the customs of the country, and what consequences might proceed from it, when he would show him all the favour in that particular that was consistent with justice.

A report of these affairs reaching Almagro before any authentic account had arrived, he laid aside the title of Pizarro's lieutenant, and assumed that of governor of Cuzco, under the pretence of its being out of Pizarro's jurisdiction, which, he maintained, extended only two hundred leagues from the line, wherein being opposed by Pizarro's brothers, Juan and Gonzalo, the dispute rose to such a height, that some skirmishes ensued, in which several lives were lost. Pizarro heard the news of these dissensions at Truxillo, when, seeing the necessity of his presence, he left all his Spanish followers to proceed with the settlement of his new colony, and committed himself, without any attendants, to the care of the Indians, who carried him in a hammock on their shoulders, and relieving one another at proper stages, travelled with such expedition, that he arrived at Cuzco before there was the least suspicion of his approach. He soon convinced Almagro of his error; told him, that, if on the arrival of their

commissions from Spain, he should dislike what was allotted to him, he would divide with him the government of Peru, and, at the same time let him know, that though the territory to the southward of Cuzco, called Chili, was, by all accounts, richer in gold and silver, he would consent to his marching at the head of the best part of their united forces to discover and obtain the possession of it.

As the assistance of the Peruvians was still necessary to the Spaniards, they endeavoured to keep on good terms with them, yet, at the same time, awed them with troops in different places; they strengthened Balancazar at Quito, and a large body marched to the north-east, to reduce some provinces bordering on the immense ridge of mountains called the Andes, and thus proved that they were very far from intending to perform the agreement they had made with the Peruvians.

Almagro having resolved upon his southern expedition, the inca Manco, in hopes of obliging the Spaniards, assisted him with 15,000 men, under the conduct of his brother Paullu, and Villahoma. With this body of men, Almagro began his march in the year 1535, and proceeded southwards as far as the province of Charcas, which he slighted as not worth keeping, on account of its being a barren and inhospitable country.* In this province Almagro was informed of two passages into Chili, both of them attended with extraordinary difficulty, the one being through a hot, sandy desart, where his people must be prepared to encounter the severest

* Charcas has, however, since proved the most valuable of all the Spanish acquisitions, as it contains the rich mountains of Potosi, from which more silver has been brought to Europe than from any other mines hitherto discovered.

attacks of heat and thirst; the other lying over prodigious mountains covered with snow, so craggy and steep, as scarcely to admit of being climbed, and so intensely cold, as to be passable only at one season of the year.

Almagro considering that the latter was the shortest road, and that cold, however sharp, was more supportable to European constitutions than excessive heat, chose that passage, and persisted in his resolution, in spite of the representations of Paullu and his Indians: but he had soon reason to repent of his obstinacy; for his men being obliged to remove the snow with their hands, made short journeys, soon consumed their provisions, and were reduced to inconceivable distresses, so that he lost above 10,000 Peruvians, and 150 Spaniards, exclusive of such as escaped with the loss of their fingers and toes, though the Spaniards were very warmly clothed; they likewise lost the greatest part of their baggage. At length, however, after a tedious march of six hundred miles, they arrived in Capayapu, subject to the inca of Peru, where, through Paullu's influence, they were chearfully entertained, and the inhabitants not only brought them plenty of provisions, but, being informed of their love of gold, made them presents to the amount of five thousand ducats.

Almagro found Paullu's authority of great service to him in his progress, for on his account he was received in many places with much cordiality, and opposed only in few, so that he might easily have established colonies in very advantageous situations, had not a kind of infatuation directed all his views towards Cuzco, where, notwithstanding the late treaty, he was resolved to rule, affirming from the

commission which he had now received from the king of Spain, that this city fell within his jurisdiction. This commission was brought him by Ruis Diaz and Juan de Harada, who joined him with recruits from Cuzco, after having passed the Cordilleras, the road Almagro himself had taken, and which, as it was then summer, they passed with very little fatigue.

Notwithstanding Almagro's receiving these recruits, he abandoned all his views upon Chili, and began his march to the northward, when his army being terrified at the remembrance of the distresses they had endured in passing the Cordilleras, absolutely refused to return by the same road they came. Upon which he was obliged to take his route through the desert, where he was told by the Indians, that there was no water, but what was to be met with in standing pools, corrupted by the heat of the sun, and even these at eighteen or twenty miles distance from each other. To remedy these inconveniences, leathern bottles were made to carry the water, and parties of the Indians dispatched before the army, to drain the pits of that which was stagnated, and leave the fresh at liberty to rise: expedients that were of vast use, and enabled them to pass these barren tracts with much less difficulty than was at first imagined.

In the mean while the Peruvians who marched with Almagro, grew discontented at the ill usage they met with from the Spaniards, and complained to each other of their barbarity. None had a greater share of these conferences than the interpreter so often mentioned, who at length engaged in a plot against Almagro's life; but reflecting on the danger to which he was exposed, endeavoured to secure

himself by flight. He was however taken, and then informed against the inca Paullu as being the principal person in the plot; but this being inconsistent with that prince's general behaviour, Almagro caused the interpreter to be put to the torture, when he confessed the falshood of his accusation, and at the same time acknowledged, that by false suggestions he had contributed to take away the life of Atabaliba. On which accounts he suffered an ignominious death.

At this time affairs were in great confusion in Peru; the inca Manco had now lost all confidence in the Spaniards, and was so sensible of the injuries he received, and of the little hopes there were of his ever being restored to the possession of his throne and the sovereign power, as had been promised by the treaty of Caxamalca, that he resolved to try what could be done by force; judging it better to rely upon the justice of his cause, and the assistance of his people, than upon the promises of those who had so basely broke their words to his brother, and had never fulfilled their engagements to himself. For this purpose he prevailed on Ferdinand Pizarro to give him leave to go to a solemn festival held at Yucaya, four leagues from Cuzco, which was in reality a kind of assembly of the states of Peru, where a scheme was laid of instantly raising three armies, and investing Cuzco, Lima, and Truxillo, at the same time. With the first he himself took the castle of Cuzco, and closely blocked up the city; the second, which consisted of a good body of troops, marched against Francis Pizarro, at the city of Lima, and the third was intended to act against Almagro, notice of which was sent to the high priest, who found means to escape from the

army. Prince Paullu was also informed of the situation of his brother's affairs, and what was expected from him, in order to facilitate the conquest of the invaders, but he rejected these proposals, and declared that he would not break his faith with the Spaniards. The interpreter having disclosed this secret with his last breath, Almagro declared Paullu emperor, and though he had before refused that title, yet he now suffered it to be given him, for the sake of his own safety, and that his nation might not want a protector.

The inca Manco still continued to besiege Cuzco, with an army of 200,000 men; but though there were seventy Spaniards in the place, yet, having some horse, and a good train of artillery, they made a vigorous defence, and what is still more surprising, made several sallies, in one of which Juan Pizarro being wounded in the head with a stone, died about three days after, to the great regret of those of his party.

The inca, hearing of Almagro's approaching Cuzco, resolved to retire; and though Almagro endeavoured to persuade him to agree to a treaty, he absolutely refused it, being determined never more to hear of terms from a people who had hitherto kept none with him: but took a very surprising step, which was disbanding his army, and privately retiring to the mountains. His officers endeavoured to dissuade him from it, by observing; that no time could ever promise him greater success than this, in which Pizarro and Almagro were at open variance. In answer to which he replied, that notwithstanding their private animosities, they would certainly join against him, should he make a show of opposing them, and that it was time enough for him to re-

turn and vindicate his right, when they were thoroughly weakened by their mutual contentions.

It is surprising that the Spaniards should have chosen this time for quarrelling among themselves, and entering into a civil war. But Almagro having a considerable body of troops under his command, resolved immediately to renew his old claim to Cuzco, and in case he should make himself master of that city, determined to render it the seat of his government. On his approaching before the walls, and finding the Indians drawn off, he sent a summons to Don Ferdinand Pizarro, the Spanish governor, to deliver up the city, to which he answered, that he held it by commission from his brother, and would not deliver it up without his orders, as he knew it to be within the limits of his brother's government. He immediately proceeded to put the place in a posture of defence; but part of the garrison being Almagro's friends, introduced his forces into the town at midnight, when Ferdinand and Gonzalo Pizarro were made prisoners; and by this means Almagro became possessed of Cuzco with little or no bloodshed, and most of the garrison entered into his pay.

In the mean time the marquis Pizarro hearing no news from his brother at Cuzco, and concluding that all the parties he had sent thither to reinforce them had been cut off by the Peruvians, resolved to send such a body of troops thither, as should be able to force their way in spite of all the opposition the Indians could make against them; and having assembled 5000 horse and foot, gave the command of them to Don Alonzo de Alverado, with orders to march with all possible expedition; and under him appointed Pedro de Lerma captain of a troop

of horse, who being an older officer, was so disgusted at this affront, that he meditated the ruin of the enterprise.

Alverado marched with such dispatch, that though he had pressed upwards of 5000 Peruvians to carry his baggage, most of them perished in the first part of the journey, by being overladen, and driven beyond their strength; upon which he halted, and pressed some thousands more to supply the places of those he had lost.

Almagro having received intelligence that Don Alonzo Alverado was advancing, dispatched some Spaniards of distinction to represent to him, that Cuzco, according to the emperor's division of Peru, was a part of his government, and to advise him to return back to Lima, till Pizarro and he should adjust the limits of their respective governments; when Alverado, instead of complying with this request, made these gentlemen prisoners. Upon this Almagro took the field, and surprised a party of Alverado's horse, by whom he was informed, that great part of the troops were better affected to him than to Pizarro, and that Pedro de Lerma, with many of his friends, would desert upon the first opportunity; he therefore advanced to the banks of a small river, on the other side of which Alverado was encamped: they remained quiet, however, without endeavouring to attack each other all day; but in the night, Orgonez, Almagro's lieutenant-general, forded the river at the head of his troops, threw Alverado's troops into great confusion, and giving Pedro de Lerma, with the rest of Almagro's friends, an opportunity of joining him, gained an easy victory, and took Alverado prisoner, with whom he returned in triumph to Cuzco. Some of

the principal officers now advised the conqueror to provide for his future security, by putting the Pizarros to death: but this he indignantly refused, alleging, that it was beneath a gentleman and a soldier to put people to death in cold blood; and, though he was pressed with great warmth to march with his victorious army against Lima, he would not agree to it, on account of his having no claim to that part of the country.

Pizarro was greatly affected at the news of this defeat, but finding himself too weak to make head against Almagro, as his whole force scarcely exceeded four hundred men, he resolved to try what could be done by policy, and therefore sent deputies to Cuzco, to propose an accommodation. Almagro received them with great civility, and promised to have an interview with Pizarro, in which commissioners should be chosen to settle their respective boundaries. He accordingly marched out of Cuzco, at the head of above five hundred Spaniards, and took the road to Lima, carrying Ferdinand Pizarro with him as his prisoner, while Gonzalo Pizarro and Alverado were left in the city, under the care of De Rojas; but after Almagro's departure they seized De Rojas, put him in irons, and made their escape to Lima, accompanied by about sixty men, whom they had won over to their interest. Upon receiving the news of their escape, Orgonez and his partizans urged Almagro to revenge it by the death of his prisoner Ferdinand; but this he peremptorily refused, and soon after met Pizarro at Mala, with twelve persons on each side, in order to terminate their disputes amicably. But this conference was, however, suddenly broke off, by one of Almagro's followers rushing abruptly

into his presence, and crying out that he was betrayed, whereupon he instantly took horse and rode off, leaving matters entirely unsettled.

This alarm was caused by the approach of Gonzalo with 700 men: upon which Orgonez also advanced with his troops, in order to prevent the treachery he suspected to be in agitation. Each side seemed now ready for war, and yet Pizarro again found means to persuade Almagro to listen to terms, and a treaty was concluded, snd sworn to by each of them, by which the possession of Cuzco, with other advantages, was ceded to Almagro, till the emperor's decision should be known. In consequence of this treaty Ferdinand Pizarro was set at liberty, upon his taking an oath not to act against Almagro.

Pizarro had no sooner obtained his brother's liberty, than he broke through the treaty, sending a notary, with witnesses, to summon Almagro to surrender Cuzco, and all the places he had conquered, on pain of being treated as a rebel: a method of proceeding that was the more inexcusable, as he had just before received an express from court, by which the governor was enjoined, under pain of the emperor's displeasure, to keep quiet possession of all such places as should own their respective jurisdiction, at the time of the messenger's arrival; and in case they thought themselves injured, they were directed to appeal to the council of the Indies. But these orders he thought fit to suppress.

Almagro, seeing how ungenerously he was treated, gave orders for defending Cuzco, and marched with his troops to meet the marquis's army, which was advancing under the command of Gonzalo

Pizarro. The two armies met at a place called Salinas; and, after an engagement which lasted two hours, Almagro was entirely defeated. Orgonez behaved with great gallantry, but, growing faint with the loss of blood, accepted quarter from a person named Fuentez, who afterwards put him to the sword. Ferdinand Pizarro, in the heat of the engagement, was unhorsed by Lerma, who upbraided him with his perjury; his armour, however, saved his life. Lerma was afterwards borne down by some of Pizarro's party, and treacherously stabbed; but had the misfortune to recover, and to be more cruelly butchered. At length Almagro, who was ill, and too weak to sit a horse, was carried into the field in a litter, and, perceiving his army defeated, retired to the citadel of Cuzco, whither he was followed by Alverado, to whom he was soon obliged to surrender.

Almagro was no sooner in the power of his enemies, than Ferdinand resolved to be revenged for his own and his brother's long imprisonment; therefore, after Almagro had been some months confined in prison at Cuzco, the lawyers were employed to draw up articles against him, the principal of which were, that he had seized the city of Cuzco, entered into a solemn treaty with the inca, encroached upon the government granted to the marquis, and fought two battles against the forces of his sovereign, by which much Christian blood had been spilled, and the progress of the Spanish arms greatly retarded.

For these offences Almagro being tried by his enemies, was convicted and condemned to die, though he appealed to the emperor, and, in very moving terms, applied to Ferdinand Pizarro to save his life. He observed, that he had spared him, and,

on account of the friendship he bore him and the marquis, had refused to put to death any of his relations; that he would do well to remember how instrumental he had been in enabling his brother to obtain those conquests, and raising him to the honours he possessed; to consider, that he was an old gouty man, who could not live many years, and that they would therefore suffer him, after the innumerable hardships he had sustained, to die a natural death. Almagro also pleaded strongly, that his appeal to the emperor might be admitted, and attempted, though in vain, to soften Ferdinand's inflexibility, by representing the kindness with which he had treated both him and his brother, when they were his prisoners, and their lives in his power. But, looking on their old companion and fellow-soldier as the only obstacle to their ambition, and believing that by his death they should obtain the sole dominion of Peru without a rival, they were deaf to all intreaties, causing him to be privately strangled in prison, and then ordered his head to be cut off on a scaffold in the great square of Cuzco. His body was left most part of the day exposed on the scaffold; in the evening a few poor Peruvians, who had been his servants, wrapped it in a coarse sheet, and conveyed it to a church erected by the Spaniards, where it was interred by the clergy under the high altar.

Thus died Almagro, in the 75th, or, as others say, the 65th year of his age. He was of a low stature, strong and well made. He became a soldier almost as soon as he became a man. He was remarkable for his bravery, and had such presence of mind, that no danger could disconcert him. He was kind, liberal, and slow in punishing; yet, from the force

of his own example, maintained very strict discipline. Though he kept a good table for his officers, he fared himself as hard as any private man in the army; and when this was represented to him as affectation, he replied, that his was the diet of a soldier. He was loyal to his prince, and merciful to the Spaniards; but haughty and ambitious, and very cruel to the Peruvians; but living with a Peruvian woman, by whom he had his son Diego, he became so kind to them, that they loved him better than any of the Spaniards.

This natural son, Almagro bequeathed to the care of Alverado, who desiring Pizarro to evacuate so much of the country as he had allowed to be under Almagro's government, that he might take possession of it for the youth, was haughtily answered, that since Almagro was no more, he knew of none who had a right to insist on sharing it with him. Alverado, exasperated at this answer, resolved to seek redress at the court of Spain, and returned to Europe with such evidence as was proper to support the cause he espoused.

The death of Almagro, though covered with a show of justice, was so highly resented by the Spaniards, that, instead of extinguishing, as was expected, it increased his faction. Ferdinand Pizarro suspecting that some designs were carrying on against him, followed Alverado to Spain, in order to bribe the Spanish ministry. But Alverado having described the conduct of the Pizarros, he was arrested and imprisoned on his arrival. The death of Alverado, who was suspected to have been poisoned, did not put a stop to the prosecution, for Ferdinand continued twenty-three years in confinement.

The Peruvians observing the divisions which subsisted among the invaders, had recourse to arms; and though the Spaniards in Peru soon amounted to above two thousand, they found it more difficult to maintain their ground than when they had not four hundred; for the terror of the Peruvians from the fire-arms and horses had, in a great degree, ceased; some of them even learned from the Spaniards how to ride and handle their arms; and, having taken some horses, were not afraid to make use of them against their tyrants. It seems highly probable, that, had not some particular bodies of the natives been so infatuated, as to adhere closely to the interests of the Spaniards, discovered the strong passes, and occasionally brought them both provisions and intelligence, Pizarro would have been obliged to abandon his conquests.

CHAP. IV.

Pizarro extends his conquests, subdues the province of Charcas, and sends his brother Gonzalo to make new discoveries. Orellana sails down the river of the Amazons, and returns to the Spanish settlements on the other side of the continent of America. Gonzalo returns to Quito.

THE most considerable acquisition made after Almagro's death, was the conquest of the province of Charcas, in which were the invaluable mines of Potosi, whose treasures attracted such a multitude of adventurers, that the Peruvians were at length compelled to submit, and become slaves to their imperious masters. But the Spaniards were far from being successful in Chili; that brave people disputed the ground with them by inches, nor

could they ever entirely conquer it; even in the province of Charcas, Gonzalo Pizarro, and his forces, were so surrounded and distressed by the natives, that his brother was obliged to march to his relief, with the garrison of Cuzco.

However, this conquest being finished, Pizarro founded the town of La Plata, so named from the silver mines, and divided not only the city, and the country about it, but the inhabitants, among the conquerors. To his brother Ferdinand, then confined in Spain, he allotted a large share; and to his brother Gonzalo, that part of the country in which were the silver mines of Potosi. Ferdinand, as a citizen of La Plata, had also a share in these mines; and a particular part of the country being assigned to his officers, they discovered so rich a vein, that they are said to have dug from it the finest silver without any alloy.

Pizarro now found himself possessed of an extent of country seven or eight hundred leagues in length, from the equinoctial to the south part of the province of Charcas, in which were more rich mines than in all the world besides; and yet his avarice or ambition was not fully satisfied, but, in extreme old age, he employed his brother Gonzalo, who was governor of Quito, in the conquest of other nations.

Gonzalo accordingly entered the province of Los Quitos, and, after subduing that country, where the people were barbarians, when compared with those of Peru, he resolved to pass the mountains which bound that province on the north. For this purpose he assembled a considerable number of the natives, and a great quantity of cattle; but having ascended half way, the cold became so intense,

that it was impossible to prosecute his march. Therefore, leaving his cattle, and the best part of his baggage, he hastily descended into the valley of Zumaque, which was extremely fertile, and there refreshed his forces for two months.

He then endeavoured to continue his march northward; but meeting with the same obstacles, he turned directly east, and entered a rich and populous country, where the inhabitants were filled with terror and amazement; and indeed they had the greatest reason, for they behaved towards them with the most savage brutality. Gonzalo Pizarro himself, is said, even by the Spanish writers, to have given several of the natives to be eaten alive by the dogs.

This inhuman treatment made them rise in arms against these invaders, which obliged Gonzalo to use all the precautions necessary in an enemy's country. But having pitched their tents on the banks of a river, it swelled so much in one night, that they narrowly escaped being drowned.

Pizarro, disappointed at this event, and not knowing what other course to take, returned to Zumaque; and thence proceeded towards a large village called Ampua, where he found a great number of the inhabitants prepared to oppose him; but there was another and greater obstacle in his way, and that was a river, so wide and deep, that he found it impossible to ford it. The only expedient he had left was, therefore, to enter into a treaty with the natives, and to desire their assistance. This proposal the cacique received with great civility, agreed to terms of peace, and granted them as many canoes as they desired; on which Gonzalo in return, made him a present of many little

Spanish toys. The cacique, however, acquainted with the ill treatment his neighbours had received from his new guests, endeavoured to make them believe, that great riches were to be found among the people who dwelt some days journey lower down the river. Pizarro returned him thanks by his interpreters, and proceeded on the search; but finding no appearance of these pretended riches, he returned to Zumaque, much dissatisfied with his expedition. However, he resolved not to return to Quito, till he had made some discovery that would render him as famous as his elder brother.

This resolution Gonzalo communicated to Francis Orellana, a gentleman of Truxillo, who joined him in the valley of Zumaque, and having taken one hundred soldiers, and some of the natives for guides, and to carry provisions, he marched directly to the east; but these soon brought him into a country, full of mountains, forests and torrents, which obliged him to make roads, and to open a passage through the woods with hatchets. After many days march, he penetrated to the province of Coca, where the cacique offered him all the accommodations the country afforded.

Gonzalo was highly pleased with this reception, and, by the assistance of his guides, entered into a conversation with the cacique, who let him know, that the country, through which he had passed, was so full of mountains, forests and rivers, that he had taken the only passage that could have brought him thither; but that, if he was willing to embark on the river he saw before him, or to follow it by land, he might assure himself, that he should reach the banks of another river, much larger, where there was a plentiful coun-

try, whose inhabitants were covered with plates of gold.

The cacique could not have mentioned a more alluring motive. Gonzalo's avarice was fired, and he immediately sent two of his guides, with orders to the officers and soldiers he had left at Zumaque, to come and join him immediately. These orders they instantly obeyed, and, surmounting all the difficulties of the way, arrived, much fatigued, at the town of Coca; where Gonzalo, having made them stay some days to refresh themselves, placed them in order of battle before the cacique, who was so terrified at their appearance, that he collected a great quantity of provisions, and presented them to Pizarro, in order to hasten his departure. The latter, impatient to be gone, the next morning filed off his troops along the river, where, having made the cacique a present of a sword, he placed himself at the head of his cavalry, and proceeded along the banks, which were extremely pleasant.

However, the smoothness of the way did not last long. It was soon interrupted by small rivers and uneven ground, and they were obliged to march forty-three days without either finding fords, or canoes to enable them to pass the river. By this long march they were much fatigued, when they were stopped by what appeared very surprising; the river grew narrow and confined between two rocks, at no more than twenty feet distance from each other, and the water, rushing with rapidity through this strait, precipitated itself into a valley, which lay 200 fathoms below.

Here Pizarro made the famous bridge for his troops to pass over, which is so much extolled by the Spanish historians; but finding the way not

better on the other side, and their provisions growing daily more scarce, Pizarro resolved to cause a brigantine to be built, in order to carry by water all his sick men, provisions, baggage and gold. Having accomplished this with no small difficulty, he sent on board this vessel whatever had obstructed his march, with fifty soldiers under the command of Francis Orellana, who were strictly ordered to keep up with them, and to come every night to the camp. This order he observed very exactly, till Gonzalo, seeing his men pinched with hunger, commanded him to go in search of provisions and cottages, where the Spaniards might meet with refreshments.

No sooner had Orellana received his orders, than he launched out into the middle of the river, where the rapidity of the stream carried him, as fast as he could wish, for in three days he made above one hundred leagues, without the use of either sails or oars. The current of the river Coca at length carried him into a much larger river, where the stream was not near so swift. He there staid a day to make his observations; when, perceiving that the further he went the river widened, he had not the least doubt, that this was the great river that had been so often sought for; which filled him with such joy at his good fortune, that without the least regard to duty, fidelity or gratitude to Gonzalo Pizarro, he determined to execute an enterprise he then formed, of pursuing the course of the river to the sea. For this purpose, he persuaded his companions, that this country was not that described by their general; that it had not that abundance the cacique told him he should find at the junction of the two rivers; and that they must proceed fur-

ther, in search of that pleasant and fertile land, where they were to store themselves with provisions; and, besides that, they saw there was no possibility of returning up the river, for though they had now proceeded only three days, yet he believed they could not make their way back in the space of a year; that, therefore, it was more reasonable for them to wait till Gonzalo came up with them, then to endeavour to return; and that it was necessary they should still proceed in search of provisions.

Thus concealing his design, he hoisted sail; but his companions, amazed at the manner in which he put in execution the design he had been proposing to them, thought themselves obliged to tell him, that he went beyond the orders of his general; that, considering the extreme want he was in, they ought to carry him the little provisions that could be found; and that he appeared to entertain some ill design, by neglecting to leave the canoes at the junction of the two rivers, as the general had ordered, for his army to pass over.

These remonstrances were chiefly made by a Dominican friar, named Gaspar de Carvajal, and a young gentleman of Badajos, called Ferdinand Sancho de Vargas; who were so respected by those on board, that their remonstrance occasioned a division in this little vessel, and from words they were very near coming to blows; but Orellana, by protestations and fair promises, appeased this disorder. By means of a friend he had on board, he afterwards gained most of the soldiers that were against him, when seeing the two heads of the other party left almost alone, he caused De Vargas to be set ashore, without either provisions or arms, in a

dismal wilderness, bounded on one side with high mountains, and by the river on the other. He had more prudence than to treat the friar in the same manner; but he let him know, that it was not for him to penetrate into the intentions of his commander, unless he had a mind to be severely chastised.

After this he continued his voyage, and the next day being willing to know if he might safely depend upon all that were with him, he told them, that he aspired to a much higher dignity than could be obtained in the service of Pizarro: that he owed every thing to himself and to his king; and that fortune having, as it were, led him by the hand, to the greatest and most desirable discovery that ever was made in the Indies, namely, the great river whereupon they were sailing, which, coming out of Peru, and running from west to east, was the finest channel in the new world, through which they might pass from the South Sea to the Atlantic Ocean; that having discovered this, he could not, without betraying them, and without ravishing from them the fruits of their voyage and industry, suffer others to share in a favour, which heaven had reserved for them alone.

By this means Orellana brought his men to have a share of that ambition which fired his own breast. His necessities, however, sometimes forced him to land, to obtain provisions; but, as he did not take these with the prudence that became him in a strange country, the natives unanimously took up arms, and with great boldness fell upon the invaders, who defeated and killed many of their antagonists with their cross-bows. On inspecting their dead bodies, the Spaniards found that several of

them were women, it being no uncommon thing in that country for the women to fight by the sides of their husbands; but Orellana, being of a romantic turn, improved this slight hint into a formal history of a great nation of Amazons settled upon this river: by which fable, he overturned his design of giving it his own name; for, from this story it received the name which it still bears, the River of the Amazons.

In the remaining part of his passage, Orellana took care to behave with more prudence and mildness to the people he met with, among whom were many gentle and even polite nations, as well as others that were fierce and warlike. In fine, he passed down the river to the sea, and having cleared a promontory, now called the North Cape, two hundred leagues from the island of Trinidad, he sailed directly thither, and there buying a ship, returned to Spain. From the report he made of the countries he had seen, to the emperor Charles V. he obtained as ample a commission as he could desire; and, in the year 1549, sailed with three ships for the river of the Amazons; but this second expedition was the very reverse of the first, and was unfortunate from the very beginning; for a contagious distemper spreading among his men, obliged him to quit two of his three ships, and afterwards his company was so reduced as to be only adequate to the navigation of a small bark, with which he proposed to prosecute his discovery; but this being wrecked on the coast of the Caraccas, he there lost the rest of his men, and soon after died of vexation and despair, in the island of St. Margaret.

But to return to Gonzalo, who, while Orellana was engaged in this expedition, was reduced to the

greatest distress. He proceeded several days along the banks of the river, till at last seeing that there were no hopes of Orellana's return, he concluded that he and his men were lost; and therefore giving up all expectation of making any further discoveries in that country, returned to his government of Quito.

CHAP. V.

Pizarro's cruelty causes him to be assassinated. Almagro the younger proclaimed governor. Opposition to his authority. Vaca de Castro arrives from Spain, empowered to settle the disputes in Peru; is opposed by Almagro, whom he defeats; and Almagro being taken, is executed, with many of his adherents.

AFTER Pizarro had sent his brother Gonzalo on the above expedition, he employed himself solely in securing and establishing his authority by a method that was at once the most cruel and impolitic: he had discharged all the officers whom he suspected to have had any regard for Almagro; and conscious of his own injustice, and fearing lest they should complain against him, he prevented their return to Spain. Many of them being then reduced to the necessity of living upon the alms of their countrymen, he resolved to deprive them even of this pitiful subsistence; and, for this purpose, published an edict, forbidding any to relieve them; a proceeding that rendered them desperate, for, seeing no end to their miseries, but by dispatching themselves or the marquis, they resolved upon the latter.

The bravest of Almagro's friends repaired pri-

vately to the city of Lima, where they were concealed, until their number amounted to above two hundred. As they were hardy veterans, and had several experienced officers among them, they resolved to seize the first opportunity of executing their design; but soon after thought proper to delay it, in hopes that a new commissioner, some of whose attendants had already arrived, would come from Spain, in order to take cognizance of the marquis's conduct; and, that he would do them justice, without laying them under the necessity of raising an insurrection. But on Sunday, June 26th, 1541, De Rada, one of the principal conspirators, being informed that they were discovered, and that the marquis was taking measures for having them all put to an ignominious death, hastily communicated this intelligence to such of the conspirators as he could meet with. These, finding there was no time to be lost, repaired one by one, to the number of nineteen, to the house of young Almagro, which stood on one side of the great square, whence they boldly marched at noon-day, with their swords drawn, through the market-place, to the marquis's palace, crying, "Long live the king, but let the tyrant die!" When, though there were above one thousand persons in the square, they neither met with opposition, nor did Pizarro receive the smallest hint of their rising; so that they found the gates of the palace open.

Pizarro was sitting with two or three friends, when the first news of the disturbance was brought by one of his pages; and immediately ordered Francis de Chaves, his lieutenant-general, to secure the great door. This he neglected, supposing it to be some trifling tumult, which would be easily

suppressed by his presence; when going down stairs, and meeting the conspirators upon the stair-case, he demanded the reason of their insolence, which was answered by two or three of the conspirators lodging their daggers in his bosom, and he fell dead at their feet. Pizarro hearing them in the gallery, and not having time to put on his armour, seized his sword and buckler, and for some time defended the door of the drawing-room with great bravery, supported only by his half-brother, Don Francis de Alcantara, and two of his pages; the rest of his company and servants having fled at the beginning of the insurrection. At length one of the conspirators killed Don Francis, when the rest pushing forward, the marquis retired before them, but at last sunk down, fainting with loss of blood, and was soon dispatched, while his two pages, who fought bravely in his defence, wounded several of the conspirators, and expired by his side.

Thus died Don Francis Pizarro, in the 65th year of his age, in the city of Lima, the capital of Peru, which he had founded ten or eleven years before. His body was, by young Almagro's permission, privately interred by his servants; no person of consequence daring, at this juncture, to attend his funeral, for fear of giving offence to the prevailing party.

The meanness of Pizarro's education was publicly known, from his not being able to write his own name, which was always inserted by his secretary between two strokes, which he drew with a pen. He was never married, but had several concubines, some of them the daughters and sisters of the inca; however, we do not find that he left any children. Nature had endowed him with some good qualities, the most remarkable of which was bravery, but his

G. Shea. sculp.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

ambition was boundless; he never scrupled to sacrifice his honour to his interest, and his cruelty rendered him a disgrace to human nature. His fate was, in some measure, like that of Almagro, his unfortunate associate; since, like him, he died a violent death; like him, was a victim to ambition, and, like him, went to the grave in obscurity after a life of splendor.

The conspirators had no sooner completed this bloody scene, than they returned to the market-place, declaring that the tyrant was dead, and proclaimed young Almagro governor of Peru. The friends of Almagro had assembled while the conspirators were attacking Pizarro in his palace; and, securing his guards, prevented him from receiving any assistance. They also secured all the horses and arms in the city, and commanded the inhabitants, who refused to join them, not to stir out of their houses without leave. They plundered the houses of the marquis and his principal friends, in which they found an immense treasure; but did not meddle with the furniture of the palace, which they left for the use of young Almagro, whom they had no sooner proclaimed governor, than they conducted thither.

Lima was instantly obliged to own the authority of Almagro, and Pizarro's death was no sooner publicly known, than Cuzco, and most of the principal towns, declared for him. But Alonzo de Alverado, who was in the southern province of Chiachapuca, and Pedro Holguin, absolutely refused to acknowledge his authority. The former, therefore, instantly assembled a body of troops between Lima and Quito; and, at the same time, Holguin, with several other officers, raised another body of troops,

and hastened to Cuzco, where they erected the royal standard, and sent messengers to the provinces of Arequipa, Los Charcas, and other places, to encourage a spirit of opposition to the new government. Upon this, some who were friends to Almagro, privately left those places, in order to join their friends at Lima, but were pursued and brought back.

In the mean time Holguin being informed that Almagro was marching at the head of six hundred men, either to lay siege to Cuzco, or to give him battle; and, being sensible that he was too weak to oppose him, resolved, if possible, to accomplish a junction with Alverado, which he performed in the following manner: he sent a party of horse to surprise some of Almagro's people, two of whom he ordered to be hanged, and sent back the rest, with orders to tell their leader, that in a day or two he would pay him such a visit as would make him repent their meeting. On which Almagro halted to receive him, while he seized that opportunity of turning off into another road; by which he quickly came up with Alverado, and soon after joined Vaca de Castro, a new commissioner, who arrived from Spain, and was not only appointed to inquire into the disputes subsisting between the generals, but was authorised, in case of Pizarro's death, to assume the post of governor of Peru. He had been driven into the bay of Gorgona by contrary winds, and resolved to proceed by land to Lima, when he was thus reinforced on the road, and, by this means, became seven hundred strong.

Vaca de Castro was a man of good sense, great knowledge, and incorruptible integrity. He was bred to the law; but his steady adherence to justice,

and his declining those causes that had the slightest appearance of illegality, prevented his having the encouragement his virtue deserved, by which means he was but little known. The emperor, who had received some convincing proofs of his virtue, preferred him to this post, without consulting any of his ministers, saying, that he would try how probity would thrive in an Indian soil, since it was so little cherished at the Spanish bar; and, it is generally allowed, that the Spanish dominions in America never had a better governor.

De Castro gave Alverado and Holguin a very agreeable reception; and to prevent all disputes, arising from a division of the chief authority between Pizarro and Almagro, assumed the title of captain-general, resolving, though he had not been bred in the field, to act every where in person. Indeed, it was impossible to behave with more even conduct. Justice was administered impartially, without the least regard to the party being either a Spaniard or a native. In short, he threatened none, flattered none, acted with dignity as governor, and lived like a private person. The people were at first astonished at his deportment; but in a few weeks his orders were obeyed with more punctuality than any of his predecessors could obtain by force, merely, because they saw he meant nothing but the public good. Belancazar left his government of Popayan to compliment him: most of those places that were not over-awed by Almagro, readily submitted to his authority; and Gonzalo Pizarro, being returned from his expedition to the eastward, after having sustained very great hardships, and lost near two-thirds of his men, sent a deputation to him from Quito, to inform him of

his submission, and to offer to march with all the men he could raise to his assistance. To this De Castro replied, that he accepted of his submission; but that the hardships he had endured in his late progress required some rest, and therefore he would dispense with his presence, and leave him at liberty to apply himself to the government of Quito.

In the mean time, young Almagro was making what head he could against the captain-general. He had great abilities, improved by proper education, and was of an open, brave, and generous disposition; but was rash, and somewhat cruel; while his youth lessened his influence, and drove him into many errors. The death of De Roda, his general, a man of fidelity and experience, was a very great misfortune; and his afterwards dividing the post of general between Garcia de Alverado and Christopher de Sotalo, laid the foundation of his ruin: for the latter having condemned a soldier to be hanged for theft, was opposed by the former, with such warmth, as occasioned a violent quarrel, in which De Sotalo was killed on the spot. This was highly resented by Almagro, when Gracia, fearing that he would seek an opportunity for retaliation, resolved to be beforehand with him, by murdering him at an entertainment he invited him to. But Almagro having obtained a knowledge of his treacherous design, absented himself under the pretence of indisposition. Garcia, however, unwilling to lose the opportunity, went to his palace, to persuade him to come to the feast, when Almagro, pretending at last to be overcome by his persuasions, seemingly assented; but on a preconcerted signal, six of his men, who lay in wait, rushed in, and stabbed him in several places, Almagro him-

self drawing his sword, and running him at the same time through the body. After this transaction, he made Balsa his general, and marched against the new governor.

De Castro had encamped about fifty leagues southwest of Cuzco, where, being willing to spare the effusion of human blood, he strove to persuade Almagro to lay down his arms; while the latter insisted upon retaining his father's government, till it should be disposed of by the emperor. Several messages passed between them; but at length Almagro, finding that De Castro was endeavouring to seduce his people, and discovering a Spaniard, disguised like an Indian, in his camp, with letters to Pedro de Candia, Almagro's engineer, containing very advantageous offers, to induce him to render the artillery useless, in case the two armies should come to an engagement, became so incensed, that he ordered the spy to be hanged; and, though before inclined to agree to terms of accommodation, he now refused to listen to any further proposals, except De Castro would consent to banish Alverado, Holguin, and many veterans, who composed the chief strength of his army: therefore both parties, losing all hopes of coming to an agreement, advanced to the engagement.

De Castro's army was composed of seven hundred Spaniards, and many Peruvians; while that of Almagro amounted to no more than five hundred Spaniards; but he had the advantage of position, his army occupying a rising ground, where his artillery commanded the whole plain below. De Castro endeavoured to avoid the effects of this disposition, by approaching the enemy under cover of a little hill; but, on losing that shelter, they

were exposed to the fire of the artillery, which did no manner of execution, from their being levelled too high. This being observed by Almagro, he flew in a rage to his engineer, upbraided him with treachery, and ran him through with a spear. He then alighted, levelled the cannon, and, ordering it to be fired, swept down seventeen Spaniards.

Almagro now seemed fair for obtaining a victory, when the heat of youth led him into a blunder that completed his destruction. De Castro boldly advancing, some of Almagro's people pressed him to lead them forward to meet him; to which he immediately consented, and inconsiderately got between the enemy and his own artillery, which rendered it useless. This being observed by Suarez, his sergeant-major, he told him, that, had he kept his post, De Castro would have been inevitably ruined; but, as he had thrown away the advantage fortune had given him, he did not choose to share in a defeat that was caused by misconduct, and immediately rode off, with several followers, to De Castro, who soon after obtained a complete victory.

In this battle, which was fought on the 16th of September, 1542, five hundred Spaniards were slain, and the principal persons in Almagro's army taken prisoners. Almagro, who had behaved with great resolution and courage, escaped with only six horsemen, intending to have taken refuge in the mountains, until he could obtain a favourable opportunity of recovering his government; but taking Cuzco in his way, with a design of carrying off his treasure, and such of his effects as would have been most useful to him in his exile, the very men, whom he had trusted with the government of the

city, apprehended him, and delivered him up to De Castro, in order to make their peace with him. The young Almagro, who was not above twenty years of age, was tried for high-treason, condemned, and executed in the same place, and much in the same manner that his father had been, and was afterwards privately buried in the same grave. The beheading of Almagro De Castro did not consider a sufficient atonement for his rebellion and its consequences; but he caused most of his principal counsellors, and particularly those who had been concerned in the assassination of Pizarro, to be tried and put to death; which not only extinguished the rebellion, but eradicated the very seeds of it.

CHAP. VI.

De Castro's wise regulations. He is superseded by Blasco Nunez Vela, and put under arrest; Nunez is opposed by Gonzalo Pizarro, and imprisoned; but escaping, is killed in battle, and Gonzalo acknowledged governor. Pedro de la Gasca, appointed governor of Peru, arrives from Spain. His authority contested. Pizarro, defeated and abandoned, surrenders, and is beheaded. De Gasca, perplexed by the demands of his troops, returns in disgust to Spain.

PEACE being thus restored, De Castro disbanded the most of his troops, laid aside his severity, and applied himself to the arts of peace. He established courts of justice, in which causes were decided with great impartiality: he erected colleges and schools in all the cities and great towns; appointed many learned men to study the Peruvian language, and instruct the natives in the doctrines of Christianity. He caused the old colonies to be better settled, and new ones planted: took care to

have the old mines improved, and such as were daily discovered to be wrought for the benefit of his sovereign, and the lawful proprietors; and, had the government continued in his hands, Peru would, in a little time, have been one of the best regulated kingdoms upon earth, and more profitable to the crown of Spain than all its other dominions. But the cabals of the ministry, who could draw no advantage from a man, whose conduct needed no defence, and was above either courting or bribing them, prevailed on the king to erect a kind of royal audience in Peru; and to give very great power to the commissioners of which it was composed, who, immediately on their arrival, made it their business to oppose the governor. This occasioned fresh disturbances, both among the Spaniards and natives, and additional complaints to the court of Spain; which were far from being displeasing to the ministers, because, whenever they came, their interest was solicited by rich presents. These discontents occasioned another person to be sent, with the title of viceroy, to supersede the governor, and enforce a body of laws, made at Barcelona; which, though well intended, were by no means proper for Peru.

This new governor, whose name was Blasco Nunez Vela, arrived at Lima in the year 1554; and, notwithstanding the inhabitants unanimously promised to support De Castro in his administration, and to petition the emperor for his continuance, he absolutely refused to take advantage of their friendship, and submitted to the authority of Nunez. This new governor, jealous of the influence of De Castro, soon found a pretence for putting him under arrest; and then proceeded in so arbitrary a manner, as to create himself many enemies, which

encouraged Gonzalo Pizarro to raise troops against him, and dispute his authority. The cause of Pizarro was so warmly espoused, that even the judges, sent by the court of Spain, acknowledged his title, in opposition to Nunez; and took such measures, that, in the city of Cuzco, he was acknowledged governor of Peru.

The historians De la Vega and Herrera represent Nunez's administration in very different lights; but as the former lived in Peru, when the transactions occurred about which he writes; and as he appears to have been possessed of all the coolness of a historian, without vindicating any ill action on either side, we shall adhere to the account he has given us.

Nunez behaved in so haughty and arbitrary a manner, that his soldiers daily deserted to Pizarro; and, being extremely passionate, he ordered Suarez, one of his best friends, to be put to death in his presence, from the bare suspicion that he designed to desert; but he was soon after fully convinced of his fidelity. In a short time this rash viceroy was taken into custody by the judges, and sent, under a guard, on board a ship in the harbour; in order to preserve him from the resentment of the populace, and the revenge of Benito de Carvajal, brother to Suarez, who had served under Gonzalo. When the resentment of the inhabitants, which was allayed by his disgrace and imprisonment, had abated, Nunez was set at liberty, and conducted to Truxillo, by Alvarez, one of the judges.

In the meanwhile Gonzalo Pizarro was generally acknowledged governor of Peru; but very prudently referred the administration of civil affairs to the judges, and solely applied himself to the improvement of his army, regulating affairs in such

a manner, that none appeared willing to dispute his authority. He resolved to send two of his party to Spain, to defend his proceedings, in the same ship with De Castro: but the latter, fearing to be ill-treated by these two envoys, prevailed on the crew to quit the harbour, and steer for Panama, before Pizarro's dispatches were ready.

Pizarro was so extremely incensed at De Castro's escape, that he accused many persons, who had showed themselves his friends, of conniving at it, and not only imprisoned them, but had the cruelty to put several of them to death.

In the meanwhile Nunez and judge Alvarez arrived at Tumbez, where they published a manifesto, in which they detailed the particulars of Pizarro's rebellion, and required the assistance of all loyal subjects against him. While Nunez was in these adverse circumstances, he discovered much greater ability than in his prosperity; but his bad character deterred Pizarro's enemies from joining him; he was therefore compelled to retire, and was pursued by Pizarro to the mountains of Quito, where he was frequently reduced to the greatest straits for want of provisions. This protracted warfare continued for a year, during which many instances of cruelty were committed on both sides; but at length the two armies came to an engagement near Quito, on the 19th of January, 1546, in which Nunez was entirely routed, and he himself fell, fighting with great bravery, his head was then cut off, and set upon a pole. But this Pizarro was no sooner informed of, than he ordered it to be taken down, and interred with the body. He affected to appear grieved at his death, and even went into mourning; but, notwithstanding this affectation of

sorrow, he solely employed himself in amassing wealth, and behaved more like a sovereign prince than a governor.

Charles V. being uneasy at hearing of these dangerous divisions, now sent Pedro de la Gasca, a member of the inquisition, with the title of president of the royal court of Peru, and the power of a sovereign prince; so that he could make or repeal laws, and pardon or punish treason, in what manner he thought fit: and, indeed, he had the same authority as the emperor would have had, had he himself come in person. He was distinguished by his mildness, affability, penetration and sagacity; by the strictest honesty, and most intrepid courage. His commission was dated at Vienna, in the beginning of the year 1546, and he arrived at Panama about the middle of July in the same year, where his agreeable behaviour procured him many friends. From thence he sent a messenger to Pizarro, with a letter from the emperor, and another from himself.

Pizarro received this messenger in a very respectful manner, and submitted to an assembly of his principal officers, the instructions he brought; in which a general amnesty was offered to all who would acknowledge the president's authority, with the promise of a proper provision to be made for Pizarro and his family, in consideration of their services. Carvajal warmly declared for accepting these terms, in which he was seconded by the moderate part: but several, of a restless disposition, prevailed on Pizarro to send a short defence of his conduct, and to desire to be confirmed in the government of Peru, to which he alleged he had an undoubted right, as being heir to his brother, who had conquered the country.

Gasca's messenger, whose name was Panigua, had private orders, in case he found Pizarro's party very strong, to grant this request; but being privately visited by most of the principal people, who agreed to join the royal standard as soon as the president arrived in Peru, he suppressed these orders; of which he had afterwards great reason to repent, since his conduct, in this instance occasioned the destruction of many Spaniards.

About this time Pizarro was informed of the defection of Hinojosa, and several others on whom he placed the greatest confidence; and that the two gentlemen he had sent into Spain, with a defence of his conduct, had deserted his interest. Soon after, the city of Cuzco was surprised by stratagem. Centeno, an officer who had fought with great bravery under the viceroy Nunez, but, after his defeat, took refuge in the mountains, once more made his appearance, declared for Pedro de la Gasca, and was joined by about eighty horsemen, with whom he resolved to surprise that city, notwithstanding its being garrisoned by three hundred men, under the command of De Robles, a person strongly attached to Pizarro. For this purpose, he ordered some Indians, as soon as it was dark, to drive some mules, and other beasts of burden, with a great noise, and matches lighted at the pommel of each saddle, up a certain street. This alarming the garrison, the soldiers marched to where the confusion was raised; while Centeno and his people entering the town on the opposite side, attacked them in the rear, and put them in such disorder, that they immediately fled, leaving him in possession of the place; and De Robles himself, having taken refuge in a convent, was made

prisoner. Thus was this action crowned with all the success that could be desired; and the late governor having treated Centeno in an insolent manner, the latter gave orders for his being beheaded.

By this time the president De Gasca arrived in the province of Quito, when he caused a general amnesty to be published, and a repeal of the laws which had been disagreeable to the people. His army was now increased by reinforcements from La Plata, Arequipa and other places, and amounted to above one thousand men; and, as it was daily increasing, he resolved to march towards Lima, which had declared in his favour a few days after Pizarro had left it to proceed to Arequipa. But the latter, finding that his affairs were every where turning against him, and that he had but about five hundred men, though he had been joined by Acosta with fifty horse, turned off to the southward, in order to establish a colony on the east side of Potosi, the silver mines of which were but just discovered; and, in case that proved unsuccessful, he intended to retreat farther southward, and make a settlement in Chili. Centeno, however, blocked up the passage, with an army of between ten and twelve hundred men; and Pizarro, after having tried in vain to bring him over to his side, resolved, after consulting with Acosta, to force a passage through his camp; for which purpose Acosta made an attack in the night, but, being discovered, was obliged to retire, though with little loss.

The next day both armies drew up in sight of each other, when the courage and conduct of Carvajal supplied the place of numbers. He armed every man with two muskets, for many who had deserted, left their arms behind them; and com-

manded his men not to move from their posts, until the enemy were close upon them; and his orders were so well obeyed, that though Pizarro's cavalry were at first closely pressed, Centeno was at last entirely routed; and, having in vain endeavoured to rally, escaped by private roads to Lima.

Pizarro being now joined by many of the vanquished, marched to take possession of Cuzco. In the mean time the president's army daily increased, and he was joined by Centeno and several other officers, among whom was Pedro de Valdivia. This last gentleman had been governor of Chili; but finding his force too small to maintain his post, had taken shipping at St. Iago for Lima, with a large quantity of treasure, for the purpose of raising recruits. On his arrival at Lima he joined the president, who received him in the most respectful manner.

Gasca being thus reinforced, found himself at the head of fifteen hundred men, and with this army determined to march in search of Pizarro, who, being flushed with success, rashly resolved to meet him, though the experienced Carvajal assured him, that it would be their entire ruin; and made it evident, that the most judicious step he could take would be, to distress the president's army, by retiring before him to the southward, and carrying off all the provisions. But Pizarro was deaf to all his arguments; and though Carvajal offered to prevent the enemy from passing the river with only two hundred foot and fifty horse, his proposal was slighted; and, after every opportunity of straitening the president was disregarded, both armies were drawn up on the 9th of April, 1548. The victory was not long in dispute; for Carvajal, disgusted at Pizarro's perverseness, had refused all command.

Garcilasso de la Vega, father to the historian, went over to the president, and was followed by the whole right wing, and several squadrons of horse: at which Carvajal, who acted only as a private man, began to sing aloud part of an old ballad, that seemed well adapted to the occasion; while the remainder of the men, seeing themselves thus abandoned, threw down their arms and fled. Pizarro being thus left with only a few officers, turned to Acosta, and calmly said: "Well, brother John, what are to do?" "Die like Romans," he replied: "No," returned Pizarro, "let us rather fall like Christians." They then moved towards Gasca's army, where Pizarro surrendered himself to Pedro de Villavicentio, who refused to take his sword and dagger. Gonzalo behaved before Gasca, who accused him of rebelling against his sovereign, with great firmness, and alleged, that he had not assumed the government until it was conferred upon him by the judges, though it was his, in right of the commission granted by the emperor to his brother and his heirs. That Nunez had been killed in battle; and that he had been forced to oppose him, in order to restore the public peace. He concluded with desiring the governor to look round him, and then added: "You may recollect that this whole country was annexed to the throne of Spain by my brother's valour. I too contributed to it; and did I, who have been his assistant, and am the only representative of that brother, ask any thing unreasonable, when I insisted upon being made its governor? I dare not tax the emperor with injustice, but I cannot help saying, that if he saw my situation, and was allowed to do it with impartial eyes, instead of treating me as a rebel, he would give me a still larger reward than that for

which I have been forced to contend." Gasca was displeased with this defence, and ordered him into the custody of Centeno, by whom he was treated with the highest respect.

A council of war was speedily summoned, for the trial of Pizarro and his adherents; it being resolved to determine their fate as speedily as possible, lest a change should happen in their favour. Pizarro, Carvajal, Acosta, and Guevarra, were convicted, and sentenced to be hanged; which was instantly executed upon all but Pizarro, who, in consideration of the nobility of his brother, was beheaded the next day, in the 42d year of his age; after which, the houses of Pizarro, both at Lima and Cuzco, were razed to the ground, and the place on which they stood sown with salt. A pillar was erected, on which his crimes were inscribed; and his head and that of Carvajal were set up in the market-place of Lima.

The president then proclaimed a general pardon, and retired to Cuzco, where he staid for some time; but, being greatly perplexed in distributing the land among the soldiers, in which he found it impossible to comply with their demands, and wearied out with their solicitations, he privately withdrew to Panama, in order to embark for Spain; and carried with him near two millions of ducats, for the emperor, and not one for himself. While he continued at Panama, he narrowly escaped losing the treasure he had amassed, by an insurrection, which he happily suppressed. He then embarked at Nombre de Dios, for Spain, in the year 1550; and the emperor, on his arrival, was so pleased with his conduct, that he gave him the bishopric of Siguenea, a city in Old Castile.

THE SETTLEMENT OF BRASIL

BY THE PORTUGUESE,

AND ITS REVOLUTIONS.

CHAP. I.

The discovery of Brasil. The small advantages at first expected from it. An account of the country and its inhabitants; the manner in which it was first settled by the Portuguese.

IN the second voyage of the Portuguese to the Indies, in 1500, De Cabral, after passing the Cape de Verde Islands, stood so far out to sea, with a view of avoiding the calms, common on the coast of Africa, that, on the 24th of April, he observed an unknown country on the west; but the sea running high, he was obliged to sail along the coast as far as 15° south latitude; where finding a good haven, he gave it the name of Porto Seguro, or the Safe Port; and the country itself he called, the Land of the Holy Ghost; but this name was afterwards changed into that of Brasil, from its abounding with Brasil-wood, which had been so called in Europe about three hundred years before this country was discovered.

Cabral sent some people on shore to examine this new country, and they reporting that it was well watered, extremely fertile, full of fruit-trees, and inhabited by a mild and gentle people, he resolved

to suffer his men to refresh themselves on shore. On his landing he found the place agreed with the description that had been given of it; and that the natives were so far from injuring the Portuguese, that they received them with more civility than they had reason to expect. As De Cabral had some criminals on board, whose sentence had been changed from death to transportation, he left two of them in the country, to learn the language, to make further discoveries, and to acquire the best knowledge they were able, of the country and its inhabitants. Being sensible that this discovery was of great importance, he resolved to lose no time in sending an account of it to the king of Portugal, and therefore immediately dispatched one of his vessels back to Lisbon, with some persons on board, on whose fidelity he could depend, together with one of the natives, in order to his being instructed in the Portuguese language. He also set up a stone cross, as a monument of his having been there, and of his having taken possession of the country in behalf of the king of Portugal; which was the more necessary, as Columbus was then on his third voyage, making such discoveries as amazed all Europe.

In consequence of this advice, the king of Portugal sent several persons to make discoveries of the coasts; who soon found, that this was part of the continent of that new world discovered by Columbus; upon which great disputes arose between the two crowns, about the extent and boundaries of this country discovered by the Portuguese; but it was at last settled, that from the river Maranon to the river Plate should be yielded to the king of Portugal.

The settlement, in the beginning, went on very

slowly: the first Portuguese inhabitants were sufficiently sensible, that the soil was fertile, the air temperate, and the country well watered; but they could report no more. Brasil appeared a pleasant, fruitful, well situated country, capable, indeed, of furnishing all the necessaries of life, though it was imagined to be destitute of gold and silver.

Upon these reports, the ministry did not desert the country, though they contented themselves with transporting thither, from time to time, those villains, whose crimes brought them under the censure of the law; which not only gave the Portuguese a mean opinion of the colony, but proved an effectual method of corrupting the natives.

Indeed, neither these discoverers nor the court of Portugal, could form any distinct idea of the importance of so vast a country, which, according to its present boundaries, may be reckoned two thousand miles from north to south, and one thousand from east to west; though the Portuguese, even to this time have scarcely any where penetrated five hundred miles. As the northern parts of the country lie near the equator, they are subject to great rains and variable winds, particularly about the months of March and September, when they are frequently disturbed with hurricanes and tempests, which lay the country under water.

The middle part of Brasil from 50° of south latitude to the tropic, has the winds and seasons directly the reverse of those in other parts of the world, within the same latitudes; for in them the dry season comes on when the sun advances to the northward, and the wet season begins when the sun returns to the southward; but here the wet season begins in April, when the south-east wind sets in

with violent tornadoes, thunder and lightning; and in September, when the wind shifts to east-north-east, it brings with it a clear sky and fair weather. There is no country between the tropics where the heats are more tolerable, or the air more healthful; it being constantly refreshed with breezes from the sea, and cooled by the lakes and rivers, which annually overflow their banks; and in the inland part of the country, the winds from the mountains are still cooler than those that blow from the ocean.

That part of Brasil which lies more to the south, and without the tropic of Capricorn, is in all respects one of the finest countries in the known world; but here the Portuguese dominions are narrow, they being confined by the Spanish territories and the river Plate.

The natives differ very little in stature or complexion from the Portuguese; but much exceed them in strength and vigour. Some lived in villages, and others roved about. These villages consisted only of three or four very large houses; in each of which a whole family or tribe lived together, under the authority of the eldest parent. They procured subsistence by fowling and fishing, and made up the rest of their diet with the fruits of the earth; but though they had no luxurious plenty, yet, in so fertile a country, they were in no great danger of want. They were, however, continually at war with each other; but for what cause is not easily determined, unless we should admit what some old writers affirm, that they made these wars chiefly that they might kill and eat each other, esteeming human flesh the greatest dainty. But perhaps the testimony of those, who own themselves guilty of extirpating thousands of these poor creatures, to

whom they could have no quarrel worthy of rational beings, ought not to be of much weight; since men are apt to calumniate and misrepresent those they have injured; as if by aggravating their vices, they could justify, or at least palliate their own. And besides, as none of the late travellers observe any sign of their ever being cannibals, they ought to be vindicated from so cruel an aspersion.

The Portuguese and Dutch writers give the name of Tapuyers to the native inhabitants of the north part of Brasil, and that of Tupinambies or Tupanamboys, to those who dwell in the south of Brasil; but divide these again into several petty nations, who speak different languages, though their manners and customs are much the same.

The Tapuyers are pretty tall, and as they live almost under the equator, are of a dark copper colour; their hair, which is black, hangs over their shoulders; but they have no beards, nor hair on any part of their bodies, and go naked; the men only inclosing their nudities in a case, and the women concealing theirs with leaves; the men also wear a cap or coronet of feathers. Their ornaments are glittering stones, hanging to their lips and nostrils, and bracelets of feathers upon their arms; some of them paint their bodies of various colours; while others, rubbing themselves with gums, stick beautiful feathers upon their skin, which at a distance make them look more like fowls than human creatures.

The Tupinambies, who inhabit the south of Brasil, are of a moderate stature, and not of so dark a complexion as their northern neighbours, who live nearer the line. They are indeed neither of them so dark as the Africans in the same latitude;

for there were no negroes in America, till they were transported thither by the Portuguese and Spaniards. The Tupinambies, however, resemble the Africans in their flat noses; which, being esteemed a beauty, are made so by art in their infancy. They have also black lank hair upon their heads; but, like the Tapuyers, have no hair on their bodies and faces, and, like them, paint their bodies.

The general food of the Brasilians is the cassavi, or mandioka-root, dried to powder, of which they make cakes like our sea-biscuits. This flour they also carry with them on journeys, and it being infused in water, serves them both as meat and drink: they do not appear to have had any corn, till the Europeans carried it thither. They also feed on other roots, fruit and herbs; on wild-fowl, the venison they take in hunting, and on fish, and with every thing eat a great deal of pepper. They generally drink spring-water, of which they are said to have the best and the greatest variety in the world; yet they have other kinds of liquors, made of fruit pressed and infused, or of honey, with which they sometimes get very drunk, sitting whole days and nights over their cups.

Before the arrival of the Portuguese, they were masters of the art of spinning, weaving, and building their houses, and of forming their arms, which consisted of bows, arrows, lances and darts; and they had some knowledge of the virtues of several herbs and drugs, which they frequently administered with success to the sick.

Hunting, fowling and fishing, were then rather their business than amusement; these being absolutely necessary for the support of their families,

in a country where they had no tame cattle or corn; drinking, dancing and singing, were more properly their diversions, which they practised on their days of rejoicing for a victory, or on the birth of their children. They are at present great smokers, and take the strongest tobacco; their pipes are a hollow reed or cane, and the bowl is a large nut-shell, that almost holds a handful of tobacco.

In short, they are a tractable and ingenious people, ready to learn any art or science the Portuguese will teach them, and take nothing so kindly of the priests, as the instructing of their children; whence the Jesuits have made many converts; and those who live under the Portuguese, generally conform to their customs in eating, drinking and cloathing. They are but little inclined to labour; for their desires are but few, and those are easily gratified. Their greatest vice is the thirst of revenge.

To return to the steps by which the Portuguese settlements in Brasil became at length so considerable. The crown had at first recourse to the making extensive grants to such as were inclined to settle there, or had the power of sending others; whence some of the richest and most powerful of the nobility had districts given them equal in extent to Portugal itself. This was at first attended with little inconvenience, since the king might, without expence, give to others what he never actually possessed. This step was the more necessary, as the whole attention, both of the ministers and nobility, was taken up with the East Indies, where the latter found means to repair their fortunes by obtaining governments, by which they soon acquired vast estates; while those who were contented to try their fortunes in this new colony, found that the natives

were resolved not to bear the yoke of slavery, and grew desperate at every attempt to bring them into subjection.

The fertility of the country, however, made some amends for these inconveniences, by drawing abundance of people from other parts of America to settle there; where they erected a new kind of government, dictated by necessity, in which every master of a family was both a planter and a soldier. He laid out as much land as himself and his family could cultivate, and daily performed his military exercises, to enable him to defend his property; hence every district had the title of captainship, which they still retain, though the state of affairs is absolutely changed.

By this means the colony flourished, and in fifty years time spread over a large tract of country; many good towns were erected, the principal of which were Tamacara, Fernambuca, Ilheos, Porto Segura, and St. Vincent, each of which was surrounded by a populous and well cultivated country.

The flourishing state of Brasil soon began to engage the attention of the court; king John III. became concerned at the grants made by his predecessors, and therefore, in the year 1549, ungenerously revoked all those made to the original proprietors. The same year he made Thomas de Sousa governor-general of Brasil, who setting sail with a fleet of six ships of war, carried with him many officers, civil and military, with a considerable body of soldiers, and six fathers of the new order of Jesuits, for the conversion of the natives. He had also a new plan of government adjusted, according to the views of the court, and was directed to build a town at the bay of All Saints.

De Sousa, soon after his arrival in Brasil, began to enter on the execution of what he was ordered to perform. He made war on the natives, built the town of St. Salvador, and erected monasteries for the Jesuits.

What de Sousa could not finish, was completed by Edward Acosta, his successor, in whose time the number of towns and inhabitants was doubled. He was also obliged to strengthen the towns, by erecting better fortifications than those with which they had been hitherto surrounded; he demolished the old fortifications, which were of earth, and raising others of brick and stone, furnished them with artillery, the necessity of which was soon justified by experience.

CHAP. II.

Fruitless attempts of the French to settle a colony in Brasil.

AT this time the affairs of France being in the greatest confusion, and the disputes between those of the church of Rome and the Calvinists being carried to the utmost height, many of the most active and industrious were desirous of leaving their native soil, and seeking an easier and more contented state in distant climates. Among these was Nicholas Durant, lord of Villegagnon, knight of Malta, and vice-admiral of Britany, who, being treated ill at Nantz, suddenly resolved to leave the kingdom, and carry a colony into some distant part of the world. Having heard some accounts of Brasil, he formed a scheme for fixing a settlement in that country, which he presented to Gaspar de

Coligny, admiral of France, desiring his assistance towards fitting out a squadron for that purpose.

This admiral, being a very zealous protestant, readily promised to give him all the encouragement he could desire, in hopes of settling a protestant colony; that, in case the affairs of his friends should be totally ruined in France, they might have a place to which they could retire. De Villegagnon, readily undertaking to put this in execution, the admiral made such a representation of the affair to king Henry II. that he obtained leave to fit out three large vessels, with a sufficient number of seamen and adventurers on board. This small squadron, in May 1555, sailed from Havre de Grace for Brasil, where, after a tedious and troublesome voyage, they arrived in November.

The colony landed upon a rock, which they found uninhabitable; but marching farther within land, fixed upon a very commodious spot of ground, almost under the tropic of Capricorn, where they erected a fortress, for their security against the natives and the Portuguese, which they called Fort Coligny. From this place the Sieur de Villegagnon sent the admiral a long account of his proceedings and situation; described the country and its inhabitants; and observed, that it was extremely practicable to make it both a useful and thriving colony: but remarked, that such as were sent to him must not expect the delicacies of Europe; that their bread was made of a certain root ground to powder; that they had no wine, much fish, and some venison; and that those who could live contentedly upon such provisions, might find a secure retreat at his fort in Brasil.

This intelligence the admiral communicated to

the famous reformer, John Calvin of Geneva, who prevailed on twelve zealous protestants of that city to engage in the design of improving this new settlement. Du Pont, a man of sense, with a good character, was appointed to conduct this affair; and with him were joined two ministers, Peter Richer, who had formerly been a Carmelite, and William Chartier; these setting out together from Geneva, waited on the admiral at Chatillon, who gave them a kind reception; and, by his assistance, joined to their own interest, they soon got together three hundred men, who embarked at Honfleur on board three vessels, in November, 1556, and arrived at Fort Coligny on the 7th of March, 1557, where they were received with great joy.

This harmony, however, was not of long duration; for the Sieur de Villegagnon and his new associates soon quarrelled, and the disputes between them arose to such a height, that Du Pont and his adherents were compelled to leave the settlement. They then sailed up the Rio Janeiro, and attempted to form an establishment upon its banks; but here they staid only six months, and then returned to France, where they represented the Sieur de Villegagnon in the blackest colours, as a hypocrite and an impostor; at which the admiral, finding that this affair was not likely to be of any advantage to the protestant cause, resolved to give himself no further concern about it.

The Sieur de Villegagnon being thus abandoned, took the best measures in his power for the security of the colony in his absence, and then returned to France. Here he professed himself a zealous Calvinist, and published an apology for his own conduct, in which he painted the ministers in as bad a

light as they had placed him; at length, renouncing all connexion with his new companions, he returned to the church he had forsook, retired to a commandery of his own order, and spent the remainder of his days in writing against the protestants. In the mean time the Portuguese embraced this opportunity to free themselves from their new neighbours; and the next year Emanuel Sa, governor of Brasil, cut off the French that were left behind, and demolished their fort.

It is worthy of remark, that, during the short time the French were possessed of this settlement, they made greater progress in trade, and established a more friendly correspondence with the natives, than the Portuguese had been able to do in fifty years. To this, indeed, an accident greatly contributed. About twenty years before, a ship from Normandy having been wrecked upon that coast, some of the crew escaped to shore, where, being well received by the natives, they married among them, and conformed to their manners; and afterwards associating with their countrymen, enabled them to acquire, almost instantaneously, the confidence and affection of the natives.

The Portuguese now for some time quietly enjoyed their settlements, until a captain Riffaut, who had been cruizing against the Spaniards, touched at the island of Maragnan, on the coast of Brasil, where he contracted so great an intimacy with the native chief, that he invited him to bring a sufficient number of his countrymen to fix a settlement there, promising to give him all the assistance in his power. This offer the French captain readily embraced; and, at his return to France, found means, by his credit and interest, to equip three ships, so effec-

tively, that there was great reason to expect extraordinary success. These flattering prospects, however, were speedily blasted: his men mutinied before he reached the island; and when he did, the largest of his ships run aground, and was lost, which compelled him to return to France. Some of his people, among whom was M. De Vaux, chose to stay with the natives, who made them extremely welcome. This young gentleman was remarkably brisk and active; he liked the climate, and continued there some time. His behaviour to the Brasilians was very engaging; and, in many respects, he proved so useful to them, that they made the same applications to him as were made to Riffaut; which engaged him to think seriously upon the subject, and return home by the first opportunity.

On M. De Vaux's arriving in France, he applied to king Henry IV., to whom he represented the vast advantages that would flow from such an establishment; upon which that prince, who had the good of his subjects at heart, and was unwilling to place too great a confidence on the credit of a young adventurer, sent a small vessel, under the command of M. Rivardier, a person of great merit, upon whose report he could depend, who took M. De Vaux with him. After remaining six months in Brasil, Rivardier returned to France, from whence he made several voyages back, before the government could come to any resolution about settling a colony. Preparations were, however, at length actually made for sending a strong squadron thither, when a stop was put to them by the murder of Henry IV. But M. Rivardier was so fond of the place, and so fully persuaded that a settlement there would turn to account, that he embarked his

whole private fortune, and engaged several of his friends to do so too; by which means he equipped three stout vessels, and engaged about three hundred men to go to Brasil, with whom he embarked at Concale, on the coast of Britany, and in July following arrived at the island of Maragnan.

He there erected a fortress on the summit of a hill, near the best port in the island, between two fine rivers, that washed both sides of the mountain, and ran from thence into the sea. Upon the bastions of this fort he mounted twenty-two pieces of cannon; and every thing seemed to promise all the success that could be desired, when, about two years after their first arrival, a strong squadron, sent by Don Jerom de Albuquerque, the Portuguese governor of Brasil, appearing before the bay, soon forced them to surrender, and, according to his orders, the place was instantly demolished; which deprived the French of all further thoughts of settling in that country.

CHAP. III.

The Dutch make themselves masters of Brasil, but are expelled. Renewal of the attempt, with a formidable force. Obtain possession of the greatest part. Count Maurice of Nassau appointed governor. His prudent conduct, and settlement of the greatest part of the country.

IN the year 1581, the crown of Portugal devolving on the head of Philip II. king of Spain, he not only became possessed of all the rich countries of America discovered by the Spaniards, but of Brasil, and all the Portuguese settlements in the East Indies. These he left to his successors, together

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

The Dutch seize St. Salvador

Maguire Sculp.

Dublin. Published by J Christie 17 Rcfs Lane

with the war he had carried on against the seven United Provinces, who had shaken off their dependence on the crown of Spain, and formed themselves into a republic, which, by attending to trade, made the most rapid progress. This new republic, by forming an East India company, obtained such prodigious advantage, that, in 1624, they were induced to set up also a West India company, which from its first institution proved fatal to the Portuguese.

The Dutch being now sensible of the state of Brazil, and the small resistance they were likely to meet with, in case they made a descent on the coast, which was no less than 1200 leagues in extent, equipped a squadron under the command of James Willikens, which entering the bay of All Saints, the Portuguese were so frightened, that, instead of providing for their defence, they immediately used all possible methods to carry off and secure their effects.

The Dutch observing the consternation into which they had thrown the enemy, instantly landed, and without much difficulty made themselves masters of St. Salvador, the capital of Brasil. Don Diego de Mendoza, the Portuguese governor, not having the courage to defend the place, fled; but Michael Texeira, the archbishop, who was of one of the best families in Portugal, notwithstanding his being in years, summoned all the clergy and monks about him, and representing the necessity they were under of laying aside their clerical capacities, prevailed on them to take up arms; and though deserted by the governor, the soldiers and the inhabitants, they for some time made a very gallant defence, and at last retreated to a neighbouring town; where, after

acting the part of soldiers, they turned pioneers, and, under the conduct of the archbishop, fortified the place, and gave the enemy as much trouble as if they had been the most regular troops in the world.

By the taking of this town, the Dutch not only got immense plunder, but became masters of the largest and best peopled district in the whole country, and seemed in a fair way of making, in a short time, a complete conquest of the whole colony; which they would probably have done, had it not been for the heroism of the archbishop, who assumed the title of captain-general, an office which he said came to him from heaven, in the legible characters of public necessity.

The news of this misfortune no sooner reached Portugal, than it threw both the city of Lisbon and the whole kingdom into confusion, which was increased by the suspicions of the nobility, that the Spanish ministry were not much displeased at this event, as it would lessen the power of the grandees, who had the greatest part of their estates in Brasil. However, king Philip IV., in whose reign this happened, showed that these suspicions were but ill founded. He immediately sent orders to Portugal to equip a fleet for the recovery of St. Salvador, and at the same time wrote a letter with his own hand to the nobility, desiring their assistance on this occasion.

This revived the spirits of the nation, and the Portuguese lords exerted themselves so effectually, that, in three months time, they had a fleet of 26 sail ready to put to sea; but though the Spaniards did not make equal dispatch, yet, in February, 1626, their fleet joined that of Portugal, and they set sail,

under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo Ossorio, marquis of Valduesa, with 15,000 men on board.

In the mean time the Dutch, being in possession of St. Salvador, and the adjacent country, began very rashly to extend themselves on every side, either from contempt of the Portuguese, or an extravagant thirst of plunder. The archbishop, however, soon convinced them of their mistake: he had now assembled fifteen hundred men, and with these not only cut off most of their parties, but at last forcing them to take shelter in the town, blocked them up, and reduced them to great distress; which he had no sooner done, than he resigned the command, first to Nunez Marino, and afterwards to Don Francis de Mauro, declaring, that his own commission expired with the necessity which had forced him to take it up.

Affairs were in this situation, when the united fleets of Spain and Portugal arrived in the bay of All Saints. Don Emanuel de Menessez immediately landed four thousand men, and joined the army before St. Salvador. The Dutch governor was, however, resolved to defend it to the last extremity; but the garrison mutinying, forced him to surrender on the 20th of April, when the Spanish and Portuguese commanders, supposing the war was at an end, and that the Dutch, like the French, would be afraid of making any further attempts on Brasil, returned home with the fleets in triumph.

They were, however, greatly mistaken: for the rich plunder of St. Salvador, which had been brought by admiral Willikens into Holland, made the Dutch desirous of engaging in other expeditions of the same kind, and encouraged the West India company

to think of making another expedition. They accordingly fitted out a strong fleet of forty-six men of war, commanded by admiral Lonk, with a considerable body of land forces on board, under general Wardenbourg, which setting sail, arrived in sight of Fernambuca on the 3d of February, 1630, and general Wardenbourg landing with near three thousand men on the 15th of the same month, marched directly towards the city of Olinda, which he found covered by three forts, with a numerous garrison in each: however he attacked and carried them all, but not without a vigorous resistance; and this success so frightened the inhabitants of the city, that they immediately surrendered; though the natives, who had became Christians, showed great spirit, and behaved on this, and on every other occasion, with the utmost courage and fidelity.

While general Wardenbourg was thus employed on shore, admiral Lonk was no less active by sea; and, as the Portuguese had no considerable naval force to oppose him, in a very short time, he reduced all the coast to the south of Olinda, securing and fortifying every place that fell into his hands. It being resolved to obtain such a footing in the country, as would enable the Dutch to keep their ground against the whole force of Portugal.

With this view admiral Lonk determined to make himself master of a very strong post, that seemed the fittest for his purpose, and of which it is necessary to give some account. The whole coast of Brasil is bordered by a thick and flat ridge of rocks, which is, in some places, twenty, and in others thirty yards broad; and were it not for several breaks and passages in this rocky inclosure, it would be impossible to approach the shore. In particular,

there is a very large passage towards the north of Olinda, but the ridge of rocks appears again almost before the city, and the inhabitants pass to it in boats at high water. This part of the ridge is called by the Portuguese Reciffo, and by the Dutch the Receif. On the north point is a very narrow passage, for ships to approach the shore, and between this ridge of rocks and the continent, is a sandy island, about a league in length, called the Sandy Receif. Upon this island, which is in 8° 2′ south latitude, was a good castle, called Fort St. George, well provided, and considered impregnable, and of this the Dutch admiral made himself master; when having strengthened the Stony Receif, he made this the chief seat of his commerce, and afterwards it became one of the most considerable places in Brasil.

The Portuguese and Spaniards were excessively alarmed at the news of this second attempt upon Brasil, and at the Dutch having conquered the captainship of Fernambuca; they therefore resolved to send thither immediately a force sufficient to drive them out, and effectually to secure the country to themselves for the future; but the disaffection of the Portuguese to the Spanish government, so divided and perplexed their measures, that they were a long time in fitting out a fleet; during which the Dutch were employed in fortifying themselves, in extending their conquests, and in taking all the necessary precautions for their defence; wherein they proceeded with the utmost industry and vigilance.

The Dutch fleet no sooner returned from Brasil, than admiral Pater was sent thither with a much stronger force, in order to make a conquest of the

whole country. He arrived in sight of the coast of Fernambuca on the 1st of May, 1631, where finding the city of Olinda closely blocked up by a numerous army, commanded by Albuquerque, the famous Portuguese general, he landed four hundred men, under the command of an experienced officer, to take a view of the enemies works, in order to form a just judgment of the best manner of beginning the attack; but the Dutch garrison, seeing his fleet come to an anchor, and the troops landed, made so vigorous a sally on the besiegers, as forced them to retire from before the city with considerable loss. Admiral Pater now enabled his countrymen to extend their conquests very considerably, particularly towards the south, intending to attack the city of St. Salvador both by sea and land; but was prevented by his receiving intelligence, that the Spaniards and Portuguese had sent a strong fleet, which was actually at sea, in order to undertake the relief of Brasil.

This fleet consisted of about thirty ships, commanded by admiral D'Oquendo, who sailed from Spain in a very indifferent condition: but at the Canaries was joined by fifteen more, and near the Cape de Verd islands received such an accession of force, as made D'Oquendo's fleet consist of fifty-four large ships. The Dutch admiral had but sixteen, but, jealous of the honour of his country, boldly resolved to fight under this amazing disadvantage, and determined to meet the enemy, which he accordingly did, in 6° south latitude. As soon as they appeared in sight, and the Dutch saw how unequal the dispute was likely to prove, ten of the captains bore away, and left the admiral only six ships to fight an enemy that had almost ten times

the number; and though he had two flags under him, these, to their immortal honour, were two of those who remained with him, so that there were three admirals to six ships. The battle was long and bloody, for many of the Portuguese ships were sunk; and it is evident, that, if the other ten ships had staid, victory would have declared for the Dutch; but at last admiral Thys, in the prince William, was sunk, and soon after, a ball unhappily falling into the Dutch admiral's powder-room, the ship was blown up, and that brave man lost. Upon this the four ships that remained, retired; but did it with such courage and address, that they not only safely arrived at Olinda, but carried off a Portuguese man of war they had taken; and, indeed, it may safely be affirmed, there never was a more glorious action.

When D'Oquendo arrived on the coast, he was satisfied with sending refreshments and reinforcements to the army under Albuquerque, but made no attempts against the city of Olinda; the great loss he had sustained in the battle, which amounted to no less than thirteen sail taken and sunk, making him leave affairs in a state little better than that in which he found them. He, therefore, after repairing his ships, set sail for Lisbon, in the month of October, but in his passage had the misfortune to meet with four Dutch men of war, well manned, who resolved to attack him, though he had forty sail still left, and most of them large ships.

In this engagement D'Oquendo lost the captain of his own ship, with twenty-two other captains, his vice-admiral, three men of war, two frigates, and about seven hundred men, after which he returned home with the wretched remains of his fleet; but

436740

the blame fell entirely on the ministers, who, in spite of his remonstrances, had obliged him to sail with ships half equipped and half manned.

As this misfortune could not be remedied, the ministers expressed their willingness to do all in their power in order to repair it, and gave orders for providing a larger fleet, better equipped and manned, to sail under the command of Don Frederick de Toledo, who had acquired great reputation. But notwithstanding their exertions, nothing could be done that season; and therefore it was deferred to the following spring, when it was resolved to send such a force as should put an end to the war at once; but as it is much easier to plan than execute, though this celebrated admiral proceeded on his voyage with a very large fleet, every way well provided, he returned to Portugal without doing any thing of importance.

The Dutch, taking advantage of these delays, made a surprising progress, and, in the space of seven years, reduced under their dominion the captainships of Fernambuca, Tamaraca, Paraiba and Rio Grande; and they had such astonishing success against the Spaniards, in this and other parts of America, that, from the time of their West India company being appointed, in 1624, to the year 1637, they destroyed and captured from them, in money and merchandize, to the value of forty-five millions of florins, or four millions and a half of our money; and of eight hundred ships fitted out against them by the crown of Spain, they destroyed and captured five hundred and forty-seven.

By this success the directors of the West India company were induced to put themselves on a level with the East India company, and resolved to place

at the head of their affairs, a person, whose credit and power would add strength to their own. With this view they pitched upon count John Maurice of Nassau, a near relation to the prince of Orange, who had distinguished himself in the service of the States with great applause.

This nobleman, readily accepting the proposal, was declared governor of Brasil and South America; and, that he might enter upon his office in a manner suitable to his quality and character, the company resolved to fit out a fleet of thirty-two large ships, with an army of two thousand seven hundred men; but the count being impatient to depart, sailed on the 25th of October, 1636, with only four ships and three hundred and fifty soldiers on board. With this small squadron he arrived on the coast of Brasil, on the 23d of January, 1637, with Adrian Vander Dussen, who had joined him near the island of Madeira, and was soon followed by other captains.

Count Maurice took the field with two inconsiderable bodies of troops. With one of these, consisting of three hundred men, he resolved to attack the Portuguese army, while the other, six hundred strong, was to be employed in various expeditions, in order to divide and distract the enemy, who had a large body of forces in the field, under the command of the count de Benjola, an officer of great bravery and experience, whose greatest force was assembled at Porto Cavallo. Thither count Maurice marched, and, after a very obstinate resistance, the Portuguese were defeated, and their intrenched camp stormed. The count de Benjola then retired with the remains of his troops under the cannon of the citadel of Povacaon; whence he retreated on the approach of the Dutch, who besieged and took

that fortress, which was garrisoned by six hundred men.

Count Maurice next took the town of Openeda, on the river St. Francis, built a citadel there, and another at the mouth of the river, by which he effectually covered his new conquest. Then returning to Olinda, he settled the civil and military government, and fitted out two squadrons; one under the command of admiral Lichthart, who had orders to attack the south coast of Brasil; and the other, commanded by commodore Hanskins, was destined to a service of still greater importance, which was fixing themselves on the opposite shore of Africa. For this purpose, it was resolved to attack the castle of St. George de la Mina, on the coast of Guinea, in the possession of the Portuguese; for the Dutch having a strong settlement in that neighbourhood, the governor sent to inform count Maurice, that this was the proper time for carrying this important project into execution. Commodore Hanskins joined the Dutch governor on the 25th of July, when attacking the castle, which was one of the strongest in that part of the world, after a regular siege they obliged the Portuguese, to surrender. After this success, commodore Hanskins returned to Olinda, where he was received by count Maurice with all the marks of honour and respect, that the performance of so important a service deserved.

The campaign in 1638 was equally glorious for the Dutch. The count de Benjola having assembled a numerous army to defend the captainship of Segerippa, count Maurice attacked and defeated him, took the capital, and reduced the whole province. This great success induced the natives of Siarra,

one of the northern captainships, to declare for the Dutch; and to offer, on the promise of being restored to the enjoyment of their freedom, to assist them against the Portuguese; when a body of troops being sent to join them, they reduced that whole district.

Count Maurice now resolved to attack St. Salvador, in the bay of All Saints, which was considered as the capital of Brasil: for this purpose he embarked all the troops he could assemble at Olinda, and landed them in the bay, in hopes of surprising the Portuguese. The count de Benjola, who was in the neighbourhood with a small body of regular troops, immediately threw himself into the place, though the governor was his avowed enemy; and count Maurice expected, that the differences which subsisted between them, would facilitate his taking the city. Indeed, the Portuguese governor at first disputed the command with the count de Benjola; but that nobleman told him, that their quarrels would only serve to ruin them; whereas, if they agreed, each of them might become as great as he could wish. To which the governor answered, "Sir, I perceive you are a wiser man than I am, and none shall obey your orders more punctually."

Count Maurice without much resistance made himself master of the strong forts of Albert and St. Bartholomew, and the castle of St. Philip. Encouraged by this success, he erected two batteries, in order to attack fort Roses, which covered the city on one side, and a horn-work, which was its principal strength, on the other. Between these lay a piece of ground, covered with shrubs and bushes, where count de Benjola advised the governor to post himself with four hundred men, while he made

a sally. This scheme had the desired effect; for the Dutch, after an obstinate dispute, endeavouring to retire through that piece of ground, were attacked in the rear, and lost four officers of distinction, their principal engineer, and three hundred of their best men; on which count Maurice abandoned the castle he had taken, and raised the siege with precipitation.

On count Maurice's return from this fruitless expedition, he applied himself with the utmost diligence to the establishment of good order and discipline in all parts of his government; fortifying the frontier places, reviewing his troops, appointing experienced officers to command them, and giving the utmost encouragement to such of the natives as showed an inclination to assist him, or to live peaceably under the protection of the Dutch; by which means he prevented the enemy from taking advantage of their late success.

The Spanish government having received an exact account of the state of affairs in Brasil, resolved to send a fleet and army thither, sufficient to compel the Dutch to abandon all their conquests. This fleet consisted of twenty-six galleons double-manned, twenty large men of war, and five thousand regular troops, under the command of Don Fernandez Count de las Torres. It set sail in the autumn of 1639, and received considerable reinforcements in its passage; but having the misfortune to be detained by calms on the coast of Africa, the plague broke out in these crowded ships, and swept away above three thousand men, before it reached All Saints bay; and the remainder of the troops were in such a sickly state, that it was necessary to put them into quarters for refreshment.

The Dutch, too weak to take advantage of the distressed state of their enemy, were waiting with great impatience for the succours which were expected, and shortly after arrived from Holland.

The count de las Torres, however, put to sea in January 1640, with a fleet of ninety-three sail, and 12,000 men on board: while count Maurice assembled forty-one men of war, and waited for the Portuguese within four miles of the port of Olinda. The Dutch fleet was commanded, under his excellency, by William Leos, an admiral of great bravery. On the 12th of the same month, the fleets met, and engaged near the island of Tamaraca, and fought from one in the afternoon until dark. In this day's engagement, the Dutch lost their brave admiral Leos. The next day he was replaced by James Huyghens, who, engaging the Spanish fleet a second time, obtained great advantages. The following day he attacked them a third time, with still greater success, on the coast of Paraib; but the greatest victory was on the fourth day, when the Portuguese suffered excessively, and were driven upon the shoals on the coast, where many perished by shipwreck, and more by hunger and thirst. Those who escaped endeavoured to return to Spain; but great disputes arising among the commanders, they separated; by which means only two men of war, and four galleons, arrived safe in the ports of Spain, and even these with much difficulty escaped a Dutch fleet, that was steering for Brasil.

The Portuguese being informed that count Maurice had embarked the greatest part of his forces on board his fleet, fell upon the Dutch settlements, and took several places; but a check was soon put to them by Hanskins, at the head of a body

of planters; and soon after admiral Lichthart and commodore Cornelius Jol, arriving with great reinforcements from Holland, the former was immediately sent into the bay of All Saints, where he destroyed the country with the utmost barbarity, while commodore Jol acted the same part in the country near the river St. Lawrence.

The count de Montalvan, the Portuguese viceroy of Brasil, immediately sent deputies to represent the cruelty of this behaviour, and to desire, that the proceedings of war might be regulated, in order to prevent such horrid scenes of murder and devastation. As count Maurice had with reluctance given these orders, agreeably to the company's instructions, he very gladly embraced this opportunity of giving way to his own inclinations; and offered to send commissaries immediately to St. Salvador, to settle a provincial treaty with the viceroy. The departure of these deputies was stopped by the arrival of two gentlemen of distinction from the count de Montalvan, who informed count Maurice of the amazing revolution that had happened in Portugal, and the probability, that it would have a great effect on the state of affairs; as the war in Brasil had not been carried on by the Dutch against the Portuguese nation, but against the Portuguese as subjects of Spain.

This revolution, which was one of the most sudden and successful in the world, happened in December 1640; when John, duke of Braganza, seated himself on the throne of his ancestors, and took the title of John IV.; by which means he became possessed of the whole dominions of Portugal, except the little town of Ceuta in Africa. Count Maurice soon receiving an exact relation

of the whole affair, and foreseeing that it would be attended either with a peace or a truce, between the States-general and the new king, resolved to exert himself with the utmost expedition. He therefore made himself entirely master of the captainship of Segerippa, which had been recovered by the Portuguese; reduced the island of Laonda on the coast of Congo, and that of St. Thomas, which lies directly under the equinoctial; and, in pursuance of his instructions, which represented the captainship of Maragnan as a healthy country, abounding with sugar, cotton, tobacco, ginger, and other valuable commodities, he dispatched admiral Lichthart and commodore Hanskins, with six men of war and six frigates, with which they soon reduced the island of Maragnan and the town of St. Lewis, wherenpon the rest of the districts submitted without resistance; so that at the end of the year 1641, the Dutch were in possession of seven of the fourteen captainships into which Brasil was divided.

King John IV. soon sent an ambassador to the Hague, to represent to the States-general, the reasonableness of owning his title, and the advantages they should mutually receive, from keeping up a good correspondence. The Dutch readily owned his title; but thinking themselves gainers by the war, and too strong for Portugal unsupported by Spain, they deferred, as long as possible, the conclusion of the treaty. At length, on the 13th of June, 1641, they signed a league offensive and defensive with that crown, in relation to the dominions of both states in Europe, and a truce for ten years in the East and West-Indies. However, on complaints being afterwards made, that several places were taken from the Portuguese, after the

publication of the truce, they refused to part with some of these: and though orders were given for delivering up others, these orders were drawn up in such a manner, that most of the Dutch governors refused to comply with them.

Upon these unjustifiable proceedings, the Portuguese viceroy, and the rest of that nation in Brasil, attempted to counteract the Dutch, by using their own stratagems. They magnified the wisdom of the Dutch government, pretended to confide in the promises made them, and took in good part all the excuses brought for their non-performance; by which means, they persuaded count Maurice and the directors of the West India company, that the Dutch territories were effectually settled, and that they had nothing to fear in Brasil, either from the natives or the Portuguese. But these arts would probably have proved abortive, if the directors of the West India company had not in a manner entered into the conspiracy themselves.

Finding that they were now possessed of what they had so long sought for, they sent repeated orders to count Maurice to take such measures as would increase their revenue; and, in particular, to send over vast quantities of sugar, and other valuable effects; and not to suffer such as were indebted to the company to pay in small sums, but to discharge their debts at once. The count observed, that the execution of these orders would be attended with many inconveniencies; that a long war had been carried on, and the country but lately reduced; that most of those who were in debt to the company, were Portuguese, who had settled in their territories, and had hitherto behaved well, and therefore ought to be kindly treated, and not driven to

extremities. The directors would not attend to his arguments: they knew that Brasil was very rich, and could see no reason why all that it produced should not be immediately shipped for Holland.

There were some other transactions that also gave them great uneasiness. Opposite to the Receif was a commodious island, upon which the count caused a new town to be built, and well fortified, chiefly out of the ruins of the city of Olinda. This town, to which he gave the name of Mauriceburgh, soon growing to a very considerable place, he united it to the Receif, which was become the centre of the Dutch commerce, by a stone bridge.

Though all this was done for the benefit of the Dutch inhabitants, and to secure the company's capital from danger, yet, as it cost four hundred thousand pounds, they could not help complaining of the expence. They were, however, most displeased at the fine palace count Maurice built for himself. This magnificent edifice was erected in the most commodious part of the town, and in the midst of gardens elegantly laid out, and planted with cocoas of various sorts, citrons, lemons, pomegranates, figs, and other fruit-trees. The palace was so contrived, as to command a most admirable prospect both by sea and land: in front was a battery of marble, rising gradually from the river side, upon which were mounted ten pieces of large cannon. Count Maurice had also a magnificent villa at some distance in the country, surrounded by fine gardens, adorned with fish-ponds, and encompassed with strong walls; the whole being so disposed, as to answer the purposes of pleasure, and the defence of the city, which it covered on that side as a fort. He also laid out parks and meadows within the

fortifications, which, while properly managed, produced every thing necessary for the support of the garrison, and were, in every respect, equally commodious and beautiful.

Thus count Maurice employed those treasures, which were the fruits of his many victories and extensive conquests; and which a person of less generosity would have transported to Holland, as his own private fortune. But these marks of public spirit, which ought to have extinguished, nourished that envy which had been conceived against him; and while he was labouring to secure and extend the company's power in Brasil, the directors of that company in Holland employed themselves in censuring his conduct, and magnifying his extravagance, in expending such vast sums, while the colony produced so little to the company's stock. They therefore formed the design of recalling him, as the only means of making the colony produce such a revenue as would be proportionable to their expectations.

CHAP. V.

Count Maurice forms a scheme for erecting a Dutch empire in America, equal to that of the Spaniards. General Brewer's expedition to Chili, and its miscarriage, occasioned by the ill conduct of the Dutch, and the recal of count Maurice.

MEANWHILE the count, who was one of the best patriots, and most able politicians, Holland ever produced, formed the scheme of raising such an empire in America, as, had it been steadily pursued, would have defied the power of all their enemies. He plainly saw, that the Dutch establishment

in Brasil, fair and flourishing as it seemed under his administration, would sink to nothing, if not supported by new acquisitions.

Being therefore informed, that the inhabitants of Chili, which lies to the rere of Brasil, on the South Seas, had driven out the Spaniards, he conceived the design of fixing a Dutch colony there; which, he thought, might be easily done, under the plausible pretence of assisting the natives against their late imperious lords the Spaniards.

This design he communicated to the States-general; and showed them the utility of it, by observing, that it would give them possession of a large, fertile and agreeable country, abounding with all the necessaries of life, and with the richest gold mines in the world; that it would humble the Spaniards, and open a trade to the South Seas; and, lastly, that it would firmly cement the circle of their commerce, as the slaves, procured by their settlements in Africa, would be taken off by that colony, and by Brasil.

The States approving of this proposal, appointed captain Henry Brewer, who had served with reputation in the East Indies, to sail with a squadron of five ships, on board of which were eighteen hundred men. This squadron sailed from the Texel on the 6th of November, 1642, and arrived at Fernambuca on the coast of Brasil, on the 22d of December following; where, having consulted with count Maurice of Nassau, as general and commander in chief of the Dutch in Brasil, he sailed from Fernambuca on the 16th of January following, and on the 5th of March came in sight of the Straits le Maire, where he cast anchor in the bay of Statesland. Having remained here until the

25th, they sailed round Cape Horn, and, after suffering much by stormy weather, in which one of the ships parted company, he arrived with the other four on the coast of Chili; then steering along the coast, on the 9th of May anchored in a bay of the South Sea, in 41° 36′ south latitude, to which they gave the name of Brewer's Haven.

An officer, with a company of soldiers, being sent on shore, they discovered a great number of sheep, oxen and horses, and some houses, but the inhabitants had fled. However, they supposed part of the country to be in possession of the Spaniards, from the large wooden crosses they saw fixed at the entrance of the houses; the next day going on shore, they observed a party of Spanish horse, and some cannon-shot was fired at the boat.

On the 20th of May a company of fifty soldiers being again sent on shore, they discovered the town of Carelmappa, and had a smart engagement with a party of Spaniards, consisting of ninety men, horse and foot, whom they defeated. The Spaniards abandoning the town, the Dutch took possession of it, and remained there until the 25th; then setting fire to the town, and killing the horses they had taken in the engagement, returned to their ships. Afterwards steering to the town of Castro, on the island of Chiloe, they arrived there on the 6th of June. A considerable body of Spanish horse and foot appeared on the coast; but the Dutch no sooner landed some soldiers than the inhabitants set fire to the town, and abandoned it, having carried away every thing that was valuable.

Castro had been adorned with many magnificent buildings, and was pleasantly situated on a hill. It was surrounded with fruitful orchards and gardens;

The Dutch defeat a party of Spaniards.

Magnier Sc.t

Dublin. Published by J Christie 17. Ross Lane

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

the fields beyond it were well cultivated; and the fruit remained on many of the trees, notwithstanding its being winter. The Dutch took a hundred sheep and some hogs off the island, and embarking on the 17th of June, returned to Brewer's Haven, whence they proposed to sail to the river Baldivia; but the north-wind blowing hard, they returned to Carelmappa, where landing a company of soldiers, they took three Spaniards prisoners, who informed them, that there were gold mines at Orsorno and Baldivia; but that they had not been wrought since the general revolt of the natives in 1595. They were likewise informed, that, previous to the above revolt, the Spaniards lived in great splendor at Orsorno, the meanest of them having at least three hundred vassals, who were compelled to pay their respective lords a certain weekly tribute in gold; but were used so cruelly, that a general insurrection took place, in which the Spaniards were drove from Orsorno and other towns, and that they then possessed little more in that part of Chili than Carelmappa and St. Michael de Calembucco. Since that time the natives had, until lately, kept up a correspondence with the Spaniards, but were then in arms against them.

This intelligence was confirmed by five Indian caciques, who came on board, and assured the Dutch, that they were extremely glad of finding they were come to assist them against their ancient enemies. To which the Dutch answered, that they had brought arms to exchange for such merchandizes as Chili afforded, to enable them to carry on the war against the Spaniards; and that they were ready to assist them to the utmost of their power.

To this the Chilese replied, that they lived very

uneasy under the Spanish government of Carelmappa, and wanted to get to their friends at Orsorno and Baldivia: but the Spaniards had possession of all the passes, and the country was overflowed by the winter rains; they therefore requested Mr. Brewer to take them to Baldivia in his ships. To this he readily consented; and they returned on shore to give their friends an account of what had passed, and to make preparations for the voyage.

The next day more of the natives went on board, and one of them bringing the head of a Spaniard, whom he had killed, they declared their resolution to shake off the Spanish yoke; on which Mr. Brewer made them a present of some spears, swords and muskets, with powder and ball, in return for which they sent him some black cattle.

Thus far this expedition succeeded; but Mr. Brewer, who alone was equal to the enterprise, dying on the 7th of August, captain Hackerman, who succeeded him in the command, behaved with so little address, that he soon let the natives know the motives which had induced the Dutch to visit their coast; and created jealousies, which he afterwards found impossible to remove.

The Dutch having taken four hundred and seventy Chilese on board, who had furnished themselves with corn, cattle, and other provisions for the voyage, set sail for the river Baldivia on the 21st of August, and arrived there on the 24th. Having sailed half a league up the river, they observed three channels, and taking the middle one, had the misfortune to run aground, so that it was two or three days before they could get all their ships afloat. On their arrival at Baldivia, they only found the ruins of the ancient gates, which were

very high, and strongly built; but the place was overrun with weeds and bushes. Here they found three or four hundred Chilese horse and foot, armed with spears eighteen feet long, some of whom came on board to welcome them on their arrival. Mr. Hackerman then harangued them by an interpreter, and informed them, that the Dutch were now in possession of Brasil, which lay on the same continent, and were in a condition to supply them with arms and ammunition. He promised to assist them in driving their enemies, the Spaniards, out of the country, and desired them to enter with him into a league offensive and defensive. He also presented them with letters from the prince of Orange to the same purpose, which were interpreted to the Chilese; for, as neither the people of the East or West Indies had any notion of a republican form of government, the Dutch constantly, in all their negociations with those distant nations, pretended to be authorised by the prince of Orange, or some single person, whom they insinuated was their monarch.

The caciques replied, that they would consult their brethren of Orsorno and Coneo, and then return to Baldivia; on which the Dutch proceeded to land their soldiers, and the commander took a view of the ground, in order to erect a fort. The same evening above one thousand Chilese arrived from Orsorno and Coneo to treat with the Dutch; and the next day Mr. Hackerman, by his interpreter, made them another speech, in which he told them, that the chief motive of his voyage was to assist the Chilese, the fame of whose actions had reached Holland; that, like them, for the recovery of their liberties, which they at last obtained, the Dutch

6271

had been at war with the Spaniards for upwards of eighty years; and, if the Chilese would enter into the confederacy, they were ready to supply them with cannon, small arms and ammunition, which they would exchange for the produce of the country. The caciques replied, they were happy in meeting with a supply of arms from so distant a country as Holland, and they would consider of what was proposed.

The Dutch then asked, if they could supply them with provisions, on which they readily promised to bring them plenty of corn and cattle. After this they entered into a verbal alliance, offensive and defensive, against the Spaniards; but the Chilese absolutely refused to execute some written articles that were interpreted to them, alleging, that this was not customary with them, for they always considered promises as sacred.

The Dutch then proceeded to build a fort at Baldivia; but when they proposed to exchange arms with the natives for their gold, the caciques appeared alarmed, and jealous of their new allies, declaring that they had no gold mines, and that there was no such thing as gold in use among them: that they indeed remembered, that formerly they had been obliged to pay heavy taxes to the Spaniards in gold, on pain of losing their ears and noses, as many of them actually did, who could not procure as much as was expected; and this had given them such an abhorrence of that metal, that they could not bear to hear it named: that they were far from valuing it, as they found all strangers did, to whom it was the cause of many mischiefs from which they were free.

To this the Dutch commander replied, that he

was not come to exact any thing of them, as the Spaniards had done, but was ready to pay them for their gold with arms, or whatever merchandize they liked best. At this the caciques, immediately penetrating into his views, stared at each other, without returning one word of answer. Upon this he did not think fit to urge them any further, though he was sensible that there were very rich mines in that part of the country. He perceived that they were deeply alarmed, and filled with the suspicion, that the Dutch, for the sake of their gold, would treat them in the same manner as the Spaniards had done. And therefore Mr. Hackerman being sensible, that he could not now expect much assistance from the natives, and that it would be impossible for him to maintain his ground, he dispatched a letter to Fernambuca, by one of his captains, containing a statement of his affairs, and desiring a reinforcement. In the meantime he continued to fortify the post he had taken at Baldivia, where he hoped to defend himself until the arrival of these supplies.

This express had not been dispatched a week before the Dutch commander became sensible of his mistake, and, that whatever misunderstanding there might be between the Chilese and the Spaniards, the former were as much afraid of the Dutch as of their ancient enemies, and would probably join with the Spaniards to expel them out of the country; for, at his next conference with the caciques, they let him know, that he must no longer expect any provisions from them; and even endeavoured to terrify him, by reporting that the Spaniards were assembling their forces by sea and land, to drive them from Baldivia. Shortly after he demolished his new erected fortification, and embarking his

people, set sail for Brasil on the 28th of October, 1643, and after a passage of two months, arrived at Fernambuca.

In the meantime, the Dutch West India company had carried their parsimonious scheme into execution; and count Maurice being as weary of their management as they were of his, on the 11th of May, 1644, quitted the government, which he had held eight years. When the above fleet returned to Brasil, and found he had departed, they were no longer at a loss for the reason of their not being supported, as with great justice they expected, and as the importance of the enterprise deserved.

CHAP. V.

The Dutch West India company strip the country of the troops employed in its defence, and send new governors, who lessen the expences, increase the profits, but neglect the fortifications, and oppress the Portuguese. The expulsion of the Dutch.

THE count returned to Europe with a fleet of thirteen large ships, and near three thousand soldiers on board: agreeable to the instructions he had received, and to the new scheme of frugal government, he left only eighteen companies for the defence of the Dutch settlements.

The successors of the great count Maurice of Nassau, one of the ablest, bravest, and most worthy men of that family, so famous for producing heroes, were chiefly Mr. Hamel, a merchant of Amsterdam, Mr. De Basis, a goldsmith of Haarlem, and Mr. Bullestraat, a carpenter of Middleburgh, men of good sense, and great fidelity to the company; but

they had narrow minds, and not the least idea of the art of governing. They forced the Portuguese, who lived under them, to pay what they owed the company in a short time, by such methods as made them lose their hearts for ever. They sent to Holland the produce of the very lands count Maurice had assigned for maintaining the fortifications, which they suffered to fall to ruin. They granted licences on very easy terms to the soldiers to return home, which lessened the expence of the army; and the very next year sent a greater quantity of sugar to Holland than had ever been sent in one year before. But all these applauded measures tended solely to the destruction of the settlement, and to deprive the Dutch of this invaluable acquisition.

Don Antonio Tellez de Silva, at this time the Portuguese viceroy, was a man of the greatest wisdom and abilities, and possessed every other qualification of a good governor. This gentleman was no sooner informed that count Maurice had carried with him two-thirds of the force of Brasil, than he insinuated to the Portuguese, subject to the Dutch, that they were only labouring for strangers, while they might be masters of all they now farmed at an exorbitant rent, if their king was restored to his rights. These suggestions had great weight; but the whole affair of recovering Brasil, was undertaken by Juan Fernandez Viera, a very extraordinary person, who was originally a butcher's boy, and was afterwards page to one of the magistrates of Olinda, while it was in the possession of the Portuguese. He afterwards became a kind of factor to the Dutch, had four sugar plantations of his own, besides being trusted with the

management of many more, and by his industry and prudence he grew extremely rich.

This person having laid the scheme of the conspiracy, sent it to Portugal by one who was ignorant of his designs; after which he sent a relation of his to court, with a letter, recommending him to the king, who granted him a troop of horse, on which he acted there as agent for the conspirators.

As Viera foresaw that this would reach the ears of the Dutch, he went directly to the council, owned what he had done, and offered to give security for his good behaviour; when two of the richest Portuguese in the Dutch territories, who were as deep in the conspiracy as himself, became bound for him. For as he owed the chief persons in administration upwards of two hundred thousand florins, they thought it adviseable not to ruin him; and, by this contrivance, he effectually secured his liberty, that he might be able to carry on his great design; in which he was assisted by Antonio Cavalcante and Amador Aragousa, who were equally engaged in the management of the Dutch affairs, and as determined to overturn their government.

This plot was proposed to be put in execution on the 24th of June, 1645, when one of Antonio Cavalcante's daughters was to be married, and a great entertainment given at Viera's house, to which most of the officers and principal persons in the company's service were invited; where they would doubtless have been seized, if the design had not been discovered the evening before it was put in execution; but, at this instant, a ship arriving from Amsterdam, brought letters from the directors of the company, containing an account, that the minister from the States-general at the court of

Portugal, had discovered that a great conspiracy was carrying on in Brasil; and that they would do well to inquire what supplies had been lately sent from Lisbon to the Portuguese in that country. The discoveries which this inquiry produced so affrighted the Dutch, that Viera and his associates were enabled to escape to the neighbouring woods, where they immediately took up arms.

Viera now assumed the character of commander in chief, and being assisted by colonel Diaz with a few Portuguese troops, and colonel Cameron at the head of a numerous body of Brasilians, he fixed his head-quarters at Pojug, a town between the Receif and Cape St. Augustine; so that, unfortunately for the Dutch, this unexpected war broke out in the very heart of their dominions. Cavalcante, at the same time, raised another part of the country; and Aragousa, at the head of a flying party, was employed in burning and destroying all the Dutch plantations without mercy.

The council, seeing themselves in this dreadful situation, assembled all the troops they were able, and published a proclamation, promising to pardon all who would submit and return to their duty, except Viera, Cavalcante and Aragousa. They gave the command of a few ill-provided troops they got together, to colonel Huys, to whom they gave the title of general, and sent two captains to the viceroy, at the Bay of All Saints, to complain of this infraction of the truce, which had still four years to come.

The viceroy received these captains with great civility, and answered with much prudence, that he was only answerable for the conduct of the inhabitants of the part of Brasil subject to the crown of

Portugal; and, if they had broken the truce, he would have given them all the satisfaction they could desire; but if the Portuguese, settled in the Dutch dominions, had been induced by oppression to take up arms, he could not help it, and it was very unjust to blame him for it.

This was the answer he gave in public; but in a private conversation with captain Hoogstrate, one of the gentlemen sent on this negociation, he not only drew him over to his interest, but prevailed on him to deliver up the important post of St. Augustine, of which he was governor.

In the mean time, general Huys attacking colonel Cameron, had the misfortune to be defeated with the loss of one hundred men. Soon after the Portuguese admiral, Salvador Correa de Bonavides, appeared with a numerous fleet on the coast; upon which admiral Lichthart, though he had but five men of war, offered him battle, which he refused, under the pretence of his having no orders to act against the Dutch, and that he was only to land a body of men in his master's dominions; which he had no sooner done, than those men, without ceremony, entered the Dutch territories, and made themselves masters of all the places that fell in their way. Upon this the council sent orders to general Huys to make a retreat; but staying for an officer whom he had sent to bring several ladies and rich effects out of the country, had the misfortune to be surrounded by the Portuguese, who took him and his men prisoners.

Orders were now sent to admiral Lichthart, to attack the Portuguese ships whenever he had an opportunity; and upon this occasion, he gave a fresh proof of his courage and admirable conduct;

Admiral Lichthart with 4 Ships
a Frigate & a Bark attacks the Portuguese
Fleet of 17 Sail.

G. Shea. sculp.

Dublin, Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane.

for, with four ships, a frigate and a bark, he attacked a Portuguese fleet of seventeen sail, took three of the largest ships, together with the admiral, burnt and sunk almost all the rest, and killed seven hundred men.

This success began to revive the hopes of the council, when they received the unexpected news, that Hoogstrate had treacherously delivered up the post of St. Augustine. For this base action he received the sum of 18,000 florins, which he employed in raising a regiment of six hundred and fifty Brasilians, of whom he was appointed colonel by the Portuguese; and appearing at the head of this body against his countrymen, behaved with resolution and fidelity in the service of Portugal.

The great superiority of the Portuguese, now enabled them to make quick dispatch in most of their expeditions, and, in a little time, they became masters of almost all the strong places in the captainship of Fernambuca. At length, they blocked up the Receif, the only strong place the Dutch had left.

When the news of these proceedings reached Holland, the people were extremely irritated; and though the Portuguese ambassadors endeavoured to persuade the States-general, that these proceedings were unauthorised by their government, yet the Dutch fitted out a fleet of fifty-two men of war, under the command of M. Blankert, admiral of Zealand, who was declared admiral of Brasil, Guinea and Angola; and with him they sent colonels Schuppen and Henderson, who had acquired great reputation in the service of count Maurice. Thus was an open war begun between Holland and Portugal.

But hardly any fleet ever met with so many unfortunate accidents and delays; for two days after they sailed from the Texel, they were forced into the isle of Wight, where the first sight they saw was the wreck of a large Dutch merchantman from Brasil, with a cargo of immense value, which was entirely lost, and, out of three hundred persons, only thirty saved: in the port of St. Helen's they remained wind-bound seven weeks, and met with a storm, on their putting again to sea, by which they suffered extremely. By these and many other accidents, they were so long delayed, that they did not arrive at the Receif, until the garrison was reduced to the utmost extremity, and was on the point of surrendering. However, by the help of these reinforcements, the war was still continued, and some small advantages obtained.

But in the beginning of the year 1647, the Portuguese again blocked up the Receif, where the whole force of the Dutch consisted of only eighteen hundred men, who, however, made a gallant defence; but, at length, sallying out to attack the enemy, they were overpowered by numbers, and entirely defeated, with the loss of eleven hundred soldiers, most of their officers, and all the artillery and ammunition they had carried with them. This misfortune, however, enabled them to make a longer defence, as they had now provisions for seven months, which would otherwise have lasted but for three.

The progress of the Portuguese became now so great, that nothing seemed capable of preventing the entire ruin of the Dutch in that part of the world. This produced a kind of national despair, which hastened the ruin that was but too plainly

foreseen. The province of Zealand recalled admiral Blankert, with whom returned most of the officers that went out with him. Difficulties, similar to those they had met with in their passage thither, were encountered on their return: so that the admiral died before the fleet arrived in Holland, and several of his officers almost as soon as they came on shore: but the sieur Shuk, who had been sent by the surviving governors of Brasil, gave the States such an affecting account of the posture of affairs in that country, that they resolved to make a great effort for its preservation, and gave orders for fitting out a fleet of fifty large men of war, and for embarking six thousand regular troops, the command of which was to be given to admiral Wittezen, who was then esteemed the ablest officer in the Dutch service; and it was also resolved to send after him an additional force of between five or six thousand men more. The admiral sailed towards the end of the year 1650, and after suffering much by storms and tempests in the passage, at length arrived on the coast of Fernambuca; but instead of a colony, the admiral found a mere hospital of sick, maimed, and infirm people: and instead of those fortresses which he was to have relieved, church-yards, filled with the bodies of those who had before been sent on the same errand. For the Portuguese, Brasilians and Negroes, living on the natural produce of the country, were healthy and strong; while the Dutch, pent up in their forts, were obliged to subsist entirely on the provisions sent them from Europe; by which means they grew wan and feeble, and died in great numbers. From the sickly state of the settlement, the admiral resolved, notwithstanding the orders he

had received, to return home without delay; this he accordingly did, leaving things in a much worse condition than he found them; for which he was afterwards called to an account, but soon justified himself.

In short, the Dutch still continued to meet with ill success, and towards the conclusion of the year 1653, the Portuguese, who now publicly assisted Viera, sent a fleet of sixteen large men of war to attack the Receif by sea, and to blow up part of its fortifications; which so terrified the garrison, that they absolutely refused to fight. The next year, the Dutch surrendered every thing they possessed in Brasil, and, in 1655, they returned to Holland.

It is impossible to conceive the uproar that this raised in the country, or the heat and fury with which the people demanded justice against general Sigismund Schuppen, who had been commander in chief for many years, and was governor of the Receif when it surrendered. The States, to secure him and his officers from their resentment, sent them to prison, and granted the only favour he asked, which was, to be allowed to make a public defence. In this, he so clearly laid open his own long and faithful services, recapitulated all the successes they had under the administration of count Maurice, and gave such an affecting picture of the miseries and misfortunes, that himself and his men had experienced since he went last thither, that he melted his auditors into tears, and the judges instantly acquitted him.

To conclude: when count Maurice, after residing eight years in Brasil, quitted the government, he left them seven captainships, one city, thirty

towns, forty-five regular fortresses, ninety sail of ships, three thousand regular troops, twenty thousand Dutch inhabitants, sixty thousand Negroes, and above twice as many Brasilians. At that time the colony annually yielded twenty-five thousand chests of sugar; and a carpenter, cooper or smith, could earn five or six guilders a day, and maintain themselves upon one. But avarice and parsimony not only occasioned the loss of this invaluable colony, but the expenditure of millions, for ten years together; and after the destruction of several thousands, sent thither from time to time, there returned to Holland in 1655, no more than between six and seven hundred persons, all of whom were in a state of extreme indigence and distress.

CHAP. VI.

The present state and produce of Brasil; the manner of making clayed sugar, and an account of the Brasil tree; the principal cities and towns of each province, and the discovery of gold and diamonds in that country.

SINCE the expulsion of the Dutch, the Portuguese have remained in quiet possession of this vast country, but suffer no ships to trade thither besides their own. The whole trade of the five northern captainships, Paria, Maragnan, Siara, Rio Grande and Paraiba, are carried on at the last-mentioned port, which is situated on a river of the same name, at about five leagues distance from the sea. Paraiba is a fine populous town, and seven or eight ships, of two hundred and fifty tons burden each, are annually sent thither from Lisbon and Oporto. Their lading chiefly consists of sugar, more of

which has been cultivated in the northern captainships than in the south, especially since the discovery of the gold mines, which have rendered the southern inhabitants more negligent about the improvement of their lands.

The sugar of Brasil was the first sent to Europe; the Portuguese having set up their works in this country about the year 1580. Their trade in this commodity soon became extremely great, and their being so long in possession of it, has made them more careful in the management of sugar than any other nation; so that, even at this time, the clayed sugars of Brasil are finer and whiter than ours, though the manner of preparing it is extremely easy. When their sugar is put into pots, and is sunk two or three inches below the brim, by draining off the molasses, they scrape off a thin hard crust, that is found on the top of the sugar, and then pour in their mixture for refining it, which is nothing more than a fine soft white clay, beat and mixed with water until it is of the consistence of cream; with this they fill up the pot or pan, and in ten or twelve days the white water passes quite through, whitening all the sugar, while the thick body of clay lodges at the top, and is easily taken off with a knife.

They also bring from Paraiba, notwithstanding its being the least frequented port in Brasil, dying woods, several sorts of drugs, and other valuable commodities; and, it is generally allowed, that these northern captainships are the best peopled, and the inhabitants in very easy circumstances, though no mines have yet been wrought in these parts.

Next to Paraiba is Tamaraca, the trade whereof is carried on at the city of Olinda, which was re-

built by the Portuguese, after its being demolished by count Maurice. It is seated on the side of a hill near the sea, a situation which renders the streets very uneven and incommodious. The entrance into the port is narrow, and extremely difficult, yet ships continually resort thither from the other parts of Brasil and the Canaries, as well as the annual fleet from Lisbon. These ships are chiefly loaded here with sugar and Brasil-wood, which last is supposed to be the best of its kind in the world.

Of this wood there are different sorts; as the Brasil of Japan, that of Lamon, that of St. Martha, and Braziletto from Jamaica and the Leeward Islands; but the best is produced in this country, and that at Fernambuca. The Brasil-tree generally grows in dry barren places, and among rocks; it is thick and large, and the timber usually crooked and knotty. It bears flowers of a most beautiful bright red, that have a very fragrant smell, which, instead of hurting, strengthens and cherishes the brain. Though the tree is very large, it is covered with so thick a bark, that when the Brasilians have stripped it off, a tree, as bulky as a man's body, is left no thicker than the calf of his leg. The wood is very hard, dry and heavy; it crackles much in the fire, and scarcely raises any smoke: that is esteemed the best, which is thick and hard. It ought upon splitting to turn from a pale to a deep red; and on chewing the chips, the best sort yields a sweet taste, somewhat like sugar. This wood is put to various uses by the turners, and takes a very good polish: but it is principally used in dying, in which it yields a very fine bright red.

The next captainship is that called by the Portuguese the Bay of Bahia, or the Bay of All Saints:

it is about twelve leagues over, but in several places is scarcely navigable, on account of the sand-banks and shoals. This bay contains several small islands, in which the Portuguese have tobacco and sugar plantations; they have also very good fisheries on the coast of these islands, and on the banks. At the entrance of the bay is the city of St. Salvador, which lies in 14 degrees south latitude, and is, at present, the centre of the Portuguese trade in this part of the world. It has a very fine port, which might be rendered still more commodious, if art and industry gave a little assistance to nature.

The city of St. Salvador, which is at present the seat of an archbishop, is divided into the upper and lower. The upper town is seated on the summit of a mountain. The houses are large and pretty convenient, but the inequality of the ground on which they stand, renders the streets very disagreeable. In the middle of the town is the great square; the sides of which are formed by the viceroy's palace, the town-house, the mint, and other public buildings, built of stone brought from Portugal. The Jesuit's college is by far the largest and finest edifice in the city; the sacristy of which is lined with the most beautiful tortoise-shell, wrought and fixed together in the most elegant manner, so that nothing can be conceived more agreeable to the eye. There are several very fine churches, as that of the Benedictine-abbey, which rivals that formerly possessed by the Jesuits; but the cathedral, which, at a distance, seems the noblest structure, upon being more nearly examined, appears neither neat nor regular. However, in richness of gilding, it surpasses all the other churches. Among the convents in this capital, is a remarkable one of the order of

St. Clare, and another for such female children as are exposed and abandoned by their parents. It is surprising to see how these foundlings are considered in this country: the king adopts them all; and the ladies of the first quality frequently take them home, when at a proper age, and maintain, educate and provide for them as their own.

The lower town, wherein the merchants and people of business reside, is situated at the foot of the hill, which is excessively steep, and is a place of great trade. Here are the royal arsenal, the king's stores and magazines, which are large, well filled, and kept in excellent order. There is also a fine yard for building ships, which is of considerable advantage. These ships are not only built at an easier rate, but are more serviceable than others, the timber being excellent in its kind, and possessing the peculiar advantage of worms being unable to penetrate it.

With respect to the fortifications of the city, there is a large square fort, and below it a smaller, with ten large pieces of cannon. These two fortresses command the mouth of the bay. A new fort, called St. Peter's Castle, which is also very strong; and in the middle of the harbour is a large fortress. At the point of Montserat they have a small but strong fort, with twelve pieces of heavy cannon. Between Montserat and the city is a fine citadel, which is a regular square, admirably fortified, and well furnished with brass cannon; the arsenal is flanked by two strong bastions that command the whole fort. There are likewise two other fortresses; one situated between St. Antonio and the city, where they make their gun-powder; and the other, the magazine, which lies on the opposite

side of the city, and commands a large artificial lake, made by the Dutch, by which the city of St. Salvador is covered on one side, and by the sea on the other.

The fleet annually sent here from Lisbon, usually sails about March, and in this bay the Brasil fleet generally assembles, in order to return together to Europe. From this port they bring home gold, amethysts, diamonds, and the best tobacco in Brasil, which is much esteemed; indigo, balsam of Capivi, ipecacuanha, pereira-brava, cinnamon, long-pepper, ginger, woods for dying and inlaying, ambergris, and other rich drugs and perfumes. They also export raw hides, train-oil and whale-fins.

All the rest of the captainships lie farther to the south, and carry on their trade by the Rio Janeiro, so called from its being discovered in January, 1550, and is one of the most considerable rivers in the world. Its banks are as beautiful as can be imagined; the climate is fine, and the soil is extremely fertile, producing sugar, indigo, tobacco and cotton in very great perfection; and European corn has been found to grow there with very little trouble. But agriculture, and all other improvements, have been discouraged, on account of the gold mines discovered in this and the neighbouring captainships of St. Vincent; though, independently of these mines, this may be considered as the richest part of Brasil. The Portuguese settled here are very different in their manners from those in the Bay of All Saints; for they are active and industrious, and suffer the Indians, who live among them, to enjoy as much freedom as themselves.

The city of St. Sebastian, the capital of this country, is very commodiously situated on the west

side of the river, about two leagues from the sea, and in 23 degrees south latitude. This city, which is very well fortified, is the seat of a Portuguese governor, and is a bishop's see, suffragan to the archbishop of St. Salvador.

There are also several other considerable towns on the Rio Janeiro, all of which carry on a considerable trade. The commodities brought from thence are generally the same as those exported from St. Salvador; besides these, gold and diamonds are found in this province.

With respect to the gold and diamonds of Brasil, minerals, which mankind hold in the greatest esteem, and exert their utmost art and industry in acquiring, the former was first found in the mountains near the city of Rio Janeiro. The manner, however, in which this discovery was made, is differently related; but the most common account is, that the Indians at the back of the Portuguese settlements were observed to make use of this metal in their fishing-hooks; and inquiry being made of their manner of procuring it, it appeared that considerable quantities of it were annually washed from the mountains, and left among the gravel and sand that remained in the valleys, after the running off, or evaporation of the water.

This discovery being made, considerable quantities of gold were exported from Brasil to Europe; and the annual exports have been considerably augmented, by the discovery of places in other provinces, where it is found in as great plenty as it was at first about Rio Janeiro; it is even said, that a slender vein of this metal runs through the whole country, at about twenty-four feet from the surface, but is too thin and poor to answer the expence

of digging. However, gold is always to be collected when the rivers or streams have had any course for a considerable time; and, therefore, the being able to divert a stream from its channel, is esteemed an infallible source of gain.

The employment of searching the bottoms of rivers and torrents, and washing the gold from dirt and sand, is principally performed by slaves, who are chiefly Negroes, of whom the Portuguese have great numbers kept for that purpose. By a very singular regulation, each of these slaves are obliged to furnish their master every day with the eighth part of an ounce of gold; and, if by their industry or good fortune they collect a larger quantity, the surplus is considered as their own property, and they are allowed to dispose of it as they think fit; by which means, some Negroes, who have fallen on rich washing-places, have purchased slaves of their own, and lived in great splendor, their original master having no other demand on them than the daily supply of the eighth of an ounce, which amounts to about nine shillings sterling; the Portuguese ounce being somewhat lighter than our troy ounce.

The Portuguese were long in possession of this country, before diamonds were brought from thence to Europe. These valuable stones are, like the gold, found in the beds of rivers and torrents, but not so universally. They were frequently perceived in washing the gold, before they were known to be of any value, and were consequently thrown away with the sand and gravel; and numbers of large stones, that would have enriched the possessors, have passed unregarded, through the hands of several persons. At length, a person acquainted

with the rough appearance of diamonds, imagined that these pebbles were of the same kind; but it was difficult to persuade the inhabitants, that what they had so long been accustomed to despise could be of such immense value; and, in this interval, it is said, that the governor procured a considerable number of these stones, under the pretence of using them as counters to play at cards. But some of them being transmitted to Europe for inspection, were declared to be diamonds, and not inferior in lustre, or any other quality, to those of the East Indies. Upon this, many of the Portuguese, in the neighbourhood of the places where they had been first observed, began to search for them with great assiduity; and, as large rocks of chrystal were found in several of the mountains, where the stream flowed, which washed down the diamonds, they flattered themselves with the hopes of discovering diamonds of a prodigious bulk. But the king of Portugal being told, that this would debase their value, and ruin the Europeans, who had in their possession a great quantity of Indian diamonds, and render the discovery of no importance, his Majesty thought proper to restrain the search after them. For this purpose he erected a diamond company, with an exclusive charter, which, in consideration of a sum paid annually to the king, had the property of all the diamonds found in Brasil; but to prevent a reduction of their value, by too large quantities being collected, they were not allowed to employ above eight hundred slaves in searching for them. To engross the whole of this trade, a large town, in the neighbourhood of the place where the diamonds were found, and a considerable district round it, was depopulated, and

the inhabitants removed to another part of the country.

Southward from the captainship of Rio Janeiro lies the captainship of St. Vincent, which is supposed to be the richest country in Brasil, or perhaps in all South America. It is bounded on the north by the captainship of Rio Janeiro, or that stiled Del Rey; and on the west by the mountain of La Plata, and the countries inhabited by various savage nations, extending from twenty-two to twenty-seven degrees south latitude. It is in length, from north to south, about three hundred miles, and in breadth, from east to west, in some places, near one hundred and eighty; though, for the greatest part it is not above half that breadth.

The town of St. Vincent is situated in a very fine bay of the Atlantic Ocean, and is well fortified. A little to the north-west lies the town of Santos, which some consider as the capital of the province. It has as fine a port as any in the West Indies, which is capable of holding the largest ships, and of being fortified in such a manner as to be able to resist any force that could be brought against it.

The only captainship to the southward of that of St. Vincent, is Del Rey, which extends from 28 to 34° 30′ south latitude, and is about four hundred miles in length, but not above one hundred broad in any part of it. Though this country is pleasant and fertile, it was entirely neglected by the Portuguese, till the discovery of the mines of St. Vincent induced them to plant it, and erect several forts on the north side of the river La Plata. But though this country is as capable of improvement as any in Brasil, yet, as it has not been as long inhabited as the other captainships, it is far

from being thoroughly peopled; so that there are only a few villages upon the sea coast, and some fortresses on the river La Plata.

The chief advantage, drawn from this province by the Portuguese, is a kind of smuggling trade carried on with the Spaniards, whom they furnish with rum and tobacco of their own growth, and with cloths, silks, linens and brandy, from Europe.

CHAP. VII.

An account of a people in Brasil called Paulists. A description of the manners of the inhabitants.

THE important discoveries, mentioned in the last chapter, occasioned new laws, new governments, and new regulations to be established, in many parts of the country; which renders it necessary for us here to go back a little, in order to take notice of a set of people named Paulists, who had erected themselves into an independent state, and whom it soon became necessary to reduce.

It being suggested to the Portuguese ministry, about the year 1685, that the climate, at the bay of All Saints, would frustrate whatever endeavours might be used to render the people active and industrious; and that a settlement, at the northern and southern extremities of Brasil, would render the country of much greater advantage to the crown of Portugal than it had hitherto been: this occasioned, on the one hand, the establishment of forts and settlements towards the river of the Amazons; and, on the other, the improvement of a new colony at Santos, which was then but small.

Most of the persons, made choice of for this purpose, were Mestizes, the offspring of the Portuguese who had married Brasilian women; and the persons, entrusted with the government of these new planters, were priests and monks; but they were sent expressly from Portugal, and care was taken that they should be fit for the purpose. The captain-general of Brasil, and all the officers in the southern captainships, had orders to treat these people kindly, and to give them no disturbance.

It soon appeared that this plan was wisely concerted; for the people multiplied prodigiously, and soon became in very easy circumstances. This drew a number of adventurers thither, among whom were Spaniards as well as Portuguese, free Negroes, mulattoes, and all the different races that are to be met with in Brasil, down to the Carabocas, who are the offspring of the Brasilians and Negroes: there were also soldiers, mechanics, broken planters; and, in short, all those sort of men, who are ready to go any where, or to do any thing for a livelihood.

As these were a very different sort of men from those of the new colony, it became impossible for them to dwell together; for the former were the quietest and most simple, and the latter, the most turbulent people in the world. These adventurers, therefore, looked out for a new settlement; and, at a small distance, found one of the properest places upon earth for their reception. This was the thick and vast forest of Parnabaccaba, which overspread all the mountains at the back of this captainship; and in this forest none but wild beasts had hitherto taken up their dwelling. They soon cleared a part of this wilderness for their habitation, wherein they established not only a new town, which they

named San Paulo, but a new republic, in which they lived after the manner they liked best.

This was at first overlooked; for the country was judged of no great value, and the adjacent captainships were pleased at getting rid of those who resorted thither. However, in the space of a very few years, they were too strong to be easily managed; for receiving all sorts of people, they quickly increased from two or three hundred to as many thousand men; and, being bold, hardy and enterprising, the governors knew not how to deal with them. In the first place, they took care to fortify the avenues to their territory, which were naturally strong; and they seldom ventured abroad, except in bodies of fourscore or a hundred men; and in such parties they frequently traversed the whole extent of Brasil.

The inhabitants of this new and extraordinary commonwealth, were denominated Paulists, from the city where they lived; they barely acknowledged the sovereignty of the crown of Portugal, without submitting to its jurisdiction; and as the tyranny of the governors of Brasil, and the oppression of the Spanish governors in the adjacent provinces, furnished this new state with abundance of members, it at last became very difficult to gain admittance among them.

They obliged such as presented themselves upon their frontiers, which they were not allowed to enter, to submit to a very strict examination, that they might know whether they were fit for their community, and not spies, or persons who intended to betray them; upon the bare suspicion of which they made no scruple of beating out their brains. But if, upon this examination, they judged they

might prove useful members, they obliged them to bring in two slaves, to labour for their support, assigning them a dwelling and plantation; by which they commenced Paulists, and were to continue so to the end of their lives, for any attempt to desert was punished with death. They made no exception of country or complexion; a savage was as welcome to them as an European; and every man, after his admission, was at liberty to lead what kind of life he liked best, provided he did not disturb the peace of the society.

These people, rejecting and despising the mandates of the court of Portugal, were often engaged in a state of hostility with the Portuguese; but the mountains that surrounded their country, and the difficulty of clearing the few passages that opened into it, generally put it in their power to make their own terms. But as gold was found to abound in this province, the king of Portugal thought it incumbent on him to reduce it to the same subjection and obedience with the rest of the country. This he was at last so happy as to effect; and the city of St. Paul is now considered as the centre of the Portuguese mines.

Having thus described the several captainships, and mentioned the produce and commodities of each, it will not be improper to take some notice of the government, and of the people in general.

The viceroy has two councils in which he presides, one of criminal and the other of civil affairs; but justice is administered very slowly, and there is not perhaps a country upon earth, where so much paper is blotted by the lawyers, before any final judgment is obtained.

There is perhaps no part of the world, China and

Japan excepted, where there is so much trouble in getting on shore, or so much difficulty in knowing how to act when a person is landed. To give a just idea of their manner of proceeding, it will not be unentertaining if we here present a short abstract from an account of a voyage to Brasil, by a French gentleman.

When they came within a league of the city of St. Salvador, they were restrained from proceeding any further, by a gun fired from a little fort: upon which they came to an anchor, and sent the supercargo ashore. He was a very sensible man, and had withal a great deal of gravity; a quality of all others the most necessary for any one who has business to transact with the Portuguese.

As soon as he landed he was conducted to the viceroy, who received him with great state and civility. He told his excellency, that he came on behalf of three French ships, homeward bound from the East Indies, that were greatly distressed, and had no hopes of performing their voyage without his protection and relief. The viceroy, after continuing for some moments silent, replied, that he was very sorry for their misfortune; because his sovereign's orders were very precise against admitting any foreign vessels into the port; and that the king had given him directions to seize and confiscate, without distinction, whatever foreign ships entered their harbour, unless it plainly appeared that they were unable to keep the sea: but that he would allow them twenty-four hours to consider, whether they would come and anchor under the guns of the fort, in order to be examined, or put to sea without receiving any relief at all; adding, that if the case was as he represented it,

care should be taken to assist and supply him; but that the French would do well to remember, that the Portuguese were not to be imposed upon.

As the ships were really in a very bad condition, they had no reason to fear any examination; they therefore came to an anchor under the fort, and the next day the judge came on board, attended by several secretaries and other officers, who examined every thing with the greatest exactness. They called for the journals, questioned the pilots, mariners, and even cabin-boys, whether they had not formed the design of touching at Brasil before they were in such distress. They all answered in the negative; yet the French had so little hope of a favourable issue, that every one in the ship, who had it in his power, made them some present or other, which they received indeed, but scarce gave them thanks. At last, however, they took their leave, and sent some carpenters on board, who reported the leaks to be so dangerous, that the crews were afraid the ships would sink before they could reach the shore.

This report was no sooner made, than the French had leave to go on shore, and take lodgings where they thought fit; but were strictly cautioned not to attempt any kind of trade, on pain of forfeiting both the ships and cargoes. The Portuguese officers, who were put on board, at first made use of the same language; but seeing the impression it made, and that the French exactly obeyed these orders, they, on the third day, told them, that this was all a farce; and, that as they understood by their presents they were a good sort of people, they would take care the French should run no risk either in buying or selling.

The French now imagined, that they should find no difficulty in procuring carpenters, and other workmen, if they paid them good wages; but they were mistaken, for none of these people durst take their money till they had leave, which was not to be obtained but by dint of presents; these, however, being properly bestowed, the carpenters came on board and began to work: for it is literally true, that in Brasil, money will do every thing.

But to proceed: the inhabitants may be divided into three sorts; planters, factors and mariners. The former purchase as many slaves as they can employ in their sugar and tobacco plantations, and when the Lisbon fleet arrives, send away their commodities, and receive an equivalent in European goods and manufactures, by the next year's fleet. The factors keep magazines of all sorts of goods that come from Portugal, which they exchange for sugar, tobacco and gold, with those planters whose necessities require an immediate supply of these articles. As for the mariners, their chief business consists in making frequent trips to Guinea to purchase slaves. This trade is very considerable. Those from the Bay of All Saints usually bring over about twenty thousand Negroes every year; and there is scarcely a Portuguese here, who has not at least a dozen black slaves in his service. The people are fond of show and magnificence, of rich clothes, jewels, and a large train of servants, to support which, they are very sparing in the expences of their tables.

The inland Brasilians of both sexes go entirely naked: but near the shore, they put on different sorts of covering, some wearing only shirts of linen or calico, and others dress after the European man-

ner. The wives always follow their husbands to war; and while the man carries nothing but his arms, the woman supplies the place of a sumpter horse, and is loaded with such provisions as are thought necessary, with her children, and a hammock, which at night they hang on trees, or fasten to poles, making a defence from the rain with palm-tree leaves. These hammocks are the chief part of their furniture, and are made of cotton, formed like net-work, six or seven feet long and four broad: but the Tapuyers make theirs twelve or fourteen feet long, so as to contain four, and sometimes six persons; their cans, cups or mugs, are made of callibashes, some of which hold thirty quarts. The poorer sort use knives made of stone, while the others purchase theirs of the Europeans.

When at home, the husband generally goes abroad in the morning with his bow and arrows, to kill birds or beasts, or goes to fish, while the wife employs her time in working at a plantation, or attends the husband to bring home the game.

The inland Brasilians have some knowledge of a Supreme Being, whom they call Tuba, which signifies most excellent; thunder they stile tubakunuga, which may be interpreted, a noise made by the supreme excellency. They have a confused knowledge of the general deluge, and believe, that the whole race of mankind were extirpated by it, except one man and his sister, the latter being pregnant before it happened; and that these by degrees repeopled the world. With respect to a state of future existence, they believe that the soul does not die with the body, but is translated to some pleasant vales beyond the mountains, where they are to enjoy great pleasures, and spend their time in

dancing and singing. These are such as have distinguished themselves in the service of their country; but such as have led idle and wicked lives, are supposed to be tortured by evil spirits, whom they call by different names, and of whom they are excessively afraid; though they pay them no religious worship, yet they sometimes endeavour to appease their wrath, by presents fastened to stakes, which they set in the ground.

CHAP. VIII.

An account of the vegetables, beasts, birds and reptiles found in Brasil.

IN describing the produce of this country, we shall begin with the vegetables, and first mention the mandioca-root, to which the Brasilians are indebted for a great part of their subsistence; for being dried, powdered, and afterwards baked in the manner of bread, it serves for the common food of the inhabitants of a great part of America. This root somewhat resembles a parsnip, and is about two or three feet in length, of the thickness of a man's arm. It has one peculiar quality, which is, that, eaten raw, it proves a mortal poison to the human species; but roasted, it is not attended with the least ill consequence; and though all kinds of beasts will eat and grow fat on it, yet its juice proves pernicious to them as well as to man.

The nara is also very remarkable; it resembles the sempervivum, but its leaves are not so thick, and are full of prickles. In the middle grows a fruit like a pine-apple, which in taste resembles a melon, but is much more delicious, and has a very

fragrant smell. The juice is esteemed good for the stone. This fruit is so very plentiful, that the natives fatten their hogs with it; and, except some small quantities that are used for sweet-meats, they have no other means for their consumption than carrying them to sea, where those who are sea-sick receive great benefit from them.

The pacoba, also called Adam's fig-tree, is very large; the stalks are soft and spongy, and the leaves very long, smooth, and soft like velvet; these are so cool and refreshing, that people in fevers have them applied to their bodies, to abate the violent heat of the distemper, and give them ease. The fruit grows in clusters like figs, at a foot distance on the main-stalk, and one cluster frequently contains two hundred. The fruit being gathered, and laid to ripen, becomes yellow; it then acquires a pleasant taste, and is not only grateful to the palate, but is esteemed medicinal, particularly in fevers and spitting of blood.

The pocaire is a shrub ten or twelve feet high, and has a stem much thicker than a man's thigh, yet so tender, that it may be cut asunder with a sword at one stroke. The leaves resemble those of water-sorrel; they are generally six feet long, very broad, but are extremely thin, and have only one strong middle rib to hold them together; on which account they are so torn by the wind blowing them about, that they hang in rags, and at a distance these shrubs appear as if stuck with feathers. The fruit, which has the name of poco, is as long as a man's hand, and both in colour and shape is like a cucumber; in taste it resembles a fig, though it is much more delicate.

There are also great plenty of ananas, or pine-

apples, which, when ripe, are here of a gold colour, and are easily discovered by their fine scent. In taste they excel our richest preserved fruits; and the liquor drawn from them is not inferior to Malmsey wine.

The country produces various sorts of palm-trees and fruits, also mulberries and dewberries; woods of various colours, some of which produce very fragrant scents; in particular the mastick, which, with the rest of the odoriferous plants and shrubs, perfume the woods in the most agreeable manner.

The timbo is a plant that springs up like a string, and rises to the top of the highest mulberry-trees, to which it sometimes grows close like ivy. They are exceeding strong and tough, and even those as thick as a man's leg, may be wound and twisted about without breaking. The bark is an infallible poison to fish, and, being thrown into water, leaves hardly any of them alive.

The bombasine cotton shrubs are found in great numbers in this country; the fruit, when ripe, divides itself into four parts, each of which yields the cotton in flocks, of the size of a small ball; and, in the middle of these flocks are black seeds closely pressed together.

The mangaba-tree is an ever-green, and bears fruit twice a year: its flowers are like those of the jessamine, and smell as well: the fruit, which is as large as an apricot, is yellow, spotted with black, and has several kernels within; these are eaten as well as the fruit itself, are wholesome, well-tasted, and lie exceedingly light on the stomach.

The araca is a sort of small pear; at least it bears a greater resemblance to that fruit than any other: it is of a red, yellow, or green colour; for there are

all of these kinds in Brasil, and they are extremely beautiful. This fruit is very pleasant, and has an agreeable acid taste.

The tree jabaticaba, is remarkable for its being entirely beset with fruit, from the root to the topmost bough. This fruit is of the size of a large lemon, has a sour taste, and the natives make a good wine of it.

The cabueriba is a very large tree, and affords excellent timber for strength and service; but what renders it most valuable is, the balm it affords, which, like that of Gilead, heals all green wounds. This is obtained by making an incision in the bark, through which the balm distils into a vessel set to receive it. Both the balm and the tree itself, have a very fragrant smell.

The cupayba is a straight and tall tree, remarkable for its yielding, when cut, a great deal of oil, which is used both for lamps and curing wounds.

This country also produces many other trees and shrubs, different from those of Europe, and among the rest, the Brasil-tree, of which we have given a description in a former chapter.

As to beasts, the tapirousson somewhat resembles a cow, in its shape and size, though in other respects it differs very much from it. It has long shaggy hair, of a reddish colour, no horns, a very short neck and tail, long hanging ears, slender legs, and a whole hoof: but though it has very sharp teeth, it never uses them against man or beast. The natives sometimes catch them in traps, and at others pierce them with arrows, not so much for their flesh (though that is good, and not much unlike beef) as for the hide, which, when dry, is in a manner impenetrable.

The coati is as grey as a badger, to which it has some resemblance. Its claws and snout are very long, and by the help of the former it climbs trees like a monkey. These animals are so ravenous, that there is no creature, which is not an over-match for them, that escapes being devoured by them; though they chiefly live upon snakes, birds, and their eggs.

The biarataca is like a ferret, but considerably larger, and has a remarkable cross of white and grey along the back; this creature also makes great havoc among the birds and their eggs; but though it has neither sharp teeth nor long claws, yet it is as able to preserve itself from its pursuer, as any other beast of prey: for nature hath given it the power of raising such an intolerable stink, that both men and dogs are almost poisoned with it, and obliged to put an end to the chase.

The apes and monkeys are very numerous in this country, and are of several colours.

The wild boars are of several sorts, as are also the leopards, tigers and ounces: some of these last are black, others grey, and others spotted. No beast can be more furious. They will assault whole troops of other animals at once, break into the herds of swine, destroy the hen-houses, and leave waste and desolation wherever they come. Killing one of them is reckoned a very glorious action among the Indians; and he that is so fortunate, has the honour of being esteemed and respected ever after as a hero.

One of the most extraordinary animals found in Brasil is the porcupine, called by the natives couando. It is about the size of an ape; but instead of hair is covered with spikes of three or four fingers

length. Its eyes are round, staring, and as red as carbuncles; it has long whiskers like a cat, and its feet resemble those of an ape, only it has but four fingers, the place for the thumb being vacant. This creature usually sleeps by day, and goes in search of prey by night. It is extremely fond of fowl, and climbs up trees, though slowly, in order to devour them. The flesh of this animal is eaten roasted by the inhabitants.

The armadillo, or shield-hog, resembles our hogs in size and shape, but is covered with scales like a shield, which, on the back, has seven partitions, and between each of these appears a dark brown skin. The head is very like that of other hogs, and has a sharp nose with which it grubs up the earth: its eyes are small, and lie deep in the head: it has a small sharp tongue, and short ears, coloured of a dark brown, without hair or scales. This animal lives upon roots, and all kinds of carrion, drinks a great deal, and is very fat. It is fond of marshy places, but burrows holes, in which it shelters itself under ground. Its flesh is much admired.

The Brasilian sluggard, so called from the slowness of its motion, not being able to proceed a stone's throw in many days, is about the size of a fox. Its head is round, and its mouth, which bears a constant foam, is little and round; its teeth are small and blunt; its nose is black, high and smooth; its eyes are small, black and heavy, and its body is covered with ash-coloured hair. It dwells upon trees, and lives on their leaves, without ever tasting any drink; and is so much afraid of rain, that, upon its approach, it hides itself. Though the limbs of this animal are extremely weak, and seem in a man-

ner disjointed, yet it will take such hold as is not easily unloosed.

The tamandua, or ant-bear, thus named from its food, is of two sorts, the great and the small. The former, which is about as large as a middle-sized dog, has a round head, a long snout, and no teeth. This animal catches ants by laying out its tongue, which, Nieuhoff says, is twenty-five, and sometimes thirty inches long, upon a dunghill, till his prey settle upon it, which they have no sooner done, than he draws them into his mouth, and swallows them.

The small one is about the size of a fox; its feet are armed with four crooked claws; and two broad black lists run along its back. It is a very fierce creature: it grasps at every thing with its paws, and, upon being struck with a stick, it will sit upright, and take hold of it with its mouth. It sleeps all day, and at night goes in search of its prey: but when it drinks, some of the water spouts through its nostrils.

The senembi, or land-crocodile, is very common in Brasil; but it seldom exceeds five feet in length. There are said to be certain stones in its head, which being given by two drachms at a time, prove an infallible remedy for the gravel. It can live two or three months without food, and affords flesh as white and as good as a rabbit.

Parrots are some of the most common birds of the country, and fly together in large flocks; there are various sorts of them, and all of them will talk with very little teaching, except one species. Their colours are very beautiful and shining, and in many of them are most admirably mixed. The breast of some is as red as scarlet, and their bodies either green, yellow or blue, but not without a little

mixture of all these colours. These never lay above two eggs at a time, and breed in the trunks of old trees, and about the rocks. Others, with all the former colours, have also a mixture of black and grey, and these breed in the houses. Another species is black, sprinkled with a little green, the eyes and beak red, and the feet yellow. There is another sort, whose body is all green; it has a yellow cap and collar, the head is adorned with a fine tuft of blue feathers, and the tail red, yellow and green. But the parrot called the tuin, is something more singular, if not for its colours, yet for its size and habits: it is no bigger than a sparrow, and is always talking and singing after its manner; it will skip into the bosom of the person who breeds it, and eat out of his mouth.

The guiranheugeta is of the size of a goldfinch. Its back and wings are blue: its breast and belly yellow, and it has a diadem of the same coloured feathers upon its head. This is an admirable bird for the cage, from the variety of its notes, and its imitations of other birds.

In Brasil there is a kind of bats, of the size of a crow: these have very sharp teeth, and bite violently. They build their nests in hollow trees and old walls.

There are here a kind of wild-geese, much like those in Europe, only somewhat larger, and their feathers vary more in colour; but though they are water-fowls, they generally prove both fleshy and well-tasted.

The barn-bird has a very odd appearance; the bill is of an astonishing length; it has a crown of green and white feathers upon its head, one half of which, as well as half the neck, has no feathers at

all. It is about the size of a stork, and, when skinned and boiled, proves tolerable food.

The bill-bird is about the size of a wood-pigeon, and has a saffron-coloured crop about the neck, of three or four fingers in compass. Its bill, which is altogether as large as the whole body, is yellow without and red within; and its feathers, which are yellow on the breast, and black on all the other parts, are tipped with red.

Brasil also produces many sorts of wild-fowl, that differ but little from those of Europe. Among the small birds, the Brasilian humming-bird is the most singular; for though very small, it makes a loud noise, and is of so variable a hue, that, turn it which way you please, it changes its colour. Some of the Brasilian women hang one of those at each ear, in the manner of a pendant.

Among the various sorts of serpents found here is, the rattle-snake, also common in the English settlements; but the most remarkable is the guaku, or liboya, a serpent of a monstrous size; some of them being, according to Nieuhoff, twenty, and others even thirty feet long. It is extremely voracious, and will spring out of the woods upon men or beasts. It is not, however, so venomous as other serpents, and the flesh is deemed tolerable food.

The gekko is, indeed, of a most venomous nature, and its bite proves mortal, unless the part wounded be immediately cut off, or burnt with a hot iron. The poisonous quality of this creature is particularly evinced, by the dreadful effects which proceed from an outward application of its urine, which, upon touching the skin, causes a blackness and gangrene. The curcuma root, which we call turmeric,

is deemed by the Brasilians, the most powerful remedy for this poison.

There are lizards in Brasil four feet in length, which the Negroes eat with safety.

Scorpions here also grow to a very large size, and their sting is venomous.

Among the spiders, there is one sort, of a remarkably large size, generally found in dunghills, or the cavities of hollow trees, which weave webs like other spiders; if provoked, they wound with a sting so small, as to be scarcely visible, and yet so venomous, that it raises a blueish swelling, that is very painful, and even mortal, if not prevented by a timely antidote.

CATHEDRAL LIBRARY,
A. M. D. G.
111 E. 50TH STREET,
NEW YORK CITY.

THE DISCOVERIES OF THE ENGLISH

IN

AMERICA.

CHAP. I.

The voyages of John Cabot, who first visited Newfoundland; and of Sebastian Cabot, for the finding out a north-west passage. Mr. Hore's attempt to establish a colony in Newfoundland. Captain Hawkins brings a Brasilian chief to England.

JOHN Cabot, a citizen of Venice, who had been long settled at Bristol, sailed from thence, with a view of making discoveries, in 1494, while Columbus was performing his second voyage, and actually saw the coast of Newfoundland, to which he gave the name of Prima Vista or First-seen; and, on the 24th of June, landed on an island, which he called St. John's, from his discovering it on the day of that saint. This island, which is in the bay of St. Lawrence, appeared to be extremely barren; but the sea around it abounded in fish, and the natives, who wore the skins of bears for clothes, were armed with bows and arrows, pikes, and wooden clubs, darts and slings.

Upon this discovery king Henry VII. granted a patent to John Cabot and his three sons, Lewis, Sebastian, and Sanchius, dated the 5th of March, 1495, with authority to sail with five ships, upon discoveries to the east, west and north, allowing them the full properties of the countries they should discover, with this only reservation, that they should

return to Bristol, and pay him the fifth part of the neat profits of the voyage; in consideration of which they were to have the exclusive right to the countries so discovered, and no other English subject was to trade thither, without their licence. John, however, dying before the squadron set sail, his son Sebastian made a proposal to the king, to discover a north-west passage to the Indies; and for this purpose, a ship was manned and victualled at Bristol, at the king's expence, and three or four other ships were fitted out by some of the merchants of that city.

With this squadron Sebastian set sail in May 1497, and on the eleventh of June got into the latitude of 67° 30′, where finding the sea still open, he imagined that he might have passed through into the Indian sea; but his crew mutinying, he was obliged to return into the latitude of 56°, and from thence he steered along the continent of America, until he came into 38° on the coast, which was afterwards called Florida. His provisions here growing short, he steered back, and having touched at Newfoundland, returned to England.

This Sebastian Cabot was the first discoverer of the continent of America, which Columbus did not see till a year after, and the first who took a view of Florida; while Juan Ponce de Leon, who visited it in 1512, took possession of it for the crown of Spain, and usually passes for the first discoverer. This voyage gave great light to Ferdinand Magellan, and induced him confidently to affirm, that such a passage might be found by the south, which he happily effected twenty-two years after.

Sebastian Cabot after this entered into the Spanish service, when he discovered the river Plata,

and sailed up it 360 miles. For this he was rewarded with the rank of grand pilot of Spain; but after residing for some time at Seville in that character, he again entered into the English service, and was employed by king Henry VII. in conjunction with Sir Thomas Pert, vice-admiral of England. These gentlemen sailed in 1516, with two ships of 250 tons, to the coast of Brasil; and afterwards visited the Spanish islands of St. Domingo and St. John Porto de Rico. In the last of these islands they traded, and paid for what they got, by giving in exchange vessels made of pewter.

A war with Scotland put an end to any further discoveries during this reign. But at length Mr. Hore, a merchant of London, resolved to attempt a settlement in Newfoundland, and to go thither himself. This gentleman receiving all the encouragement he could expect from king Henry VIII., many young gentlemen of fortune and distinguished rank, offered to share both the expence and danger of the undertaking; Mr. Hore therefore fitted out two ships, which set sail about the end of April 1536, with 120 men on board, including thirty persons of character.

Within the space of two months they arrived at Cape Breton, from whence they sailed round a great part of Newfoundland to Penguin-island, in the latitude of 50° 40′, where they found great plenty of the fowl from whence the island takes its name. They afterwards went on shore upon the east side of Newfoundland, and had an accidental view of a boat-full of the natives of the island, whom they pursued both by sea and land, but were not able to overtake them. They staid here till their provisions began to grow very short; and, being then

afraid to trust themselves at sea in such a condition, delayed going on board till they were in such distress, that they actually eat one another.

Soon after a French ship, well manned and victualled, put into the same harbour; of this the English, prompted by the irresistible calls of hunger, resolved to take advantage, and being weary of a country in which they had endured such miseries, waited for a favourable opportunity, and then seizing the French ship, left their own, and sailed directly for England. They had a prosperous voyage, and arrived at St. Ives in Cornwall, about the end of October, so much altered, that their nearest relations did not know them.

Some months after the Frenchmen came to England to complain, that the English had taken away their ship, and that they should have perished with hunger, if they had not supported themselves by fishing. King Henry examined closely into the affair, and finding that extreme want was the sole cause of an action, that could be no otherwise justified, he satisfied the French to the full extent of their demands, and pardoned his own subjects a crime, which necessity had forced them to commit.

To these beginnings we owe the Newfoundland trade. That island is of a triangular figure, three hundred and fifty miles from north to south, and two hundred miles in breadth at the base from east to west, where broadest. On the north it is separated from the continent by the narrow strait of Belleisle; on the west it has the bay of St. Lawrence; on the south Cape Breton; and on the east the ocean. There is no country in the world better furnished with harbours, and it is abundantly supplied with fresh water. The climate in summer is

very hot; but so cold in winter, that the snow lies on the ground at least five months, notwithstanding its being situated between 47° and 52° north latitude, and, consequently, more to the south than England. It however produces filberts, strawberries, some kinds of cherries and other hardy fruits. Corn and hay succeed but indifferently, yet it affords great plenty of venison, wild-fowl and fish, so that with dry food in plenty from Europe, people may live there very comfortably even in winter, since the country produces fuel of several kinds in abundance. In short, notwithstanding the hardships of those who first attempted a settlement in this island, and the bleakness and barrenness of this inhospitable country, it soon became of the utmost consequence; for towards the close of queen Elizabeth's reign, there were annually employed on its coasts upwards of two hundred fishing vessels, on board of which were above eight thousand seamen.

Sometime after Mr. William Hawkins,* an officer in the navy of king Henry VIII., made three prosperous voyages to Guinea, and from thence across the Atlantic Ocean to Brasil, where, having some dealings with the prince or chief of the Brasilians, he expressed a desire of seeing England; but, at the same time showed a suspicion of his not obtaining leave to return home. To remove this distrust, captain Hawkins very readily offered to leave Mr. Martin Cockram, whom the Indians esteemed next to himself, as a hostage; and this offer was readily accepted.

This Brasilian chief he brought over and pre-

* This gentleman was the father of the famous sir John Hawkins, and the grandfather of sir Richard Hawkins, both eminent seamen.

sented to king Henry, who received and entertained him very kindly, and after a year's stay in England, generously dismissed him: but in his passage home he took sick and died, which gave all on board great concern, from an apprehension that Mr. Cockram would be either punished with death, or detained during life. Their fears were, however, ill founded; for the Brasilians, hearing what they had to allege, readily concluded, that it was far from being likely that they would dare to return, if they had ill used their king; and that it was out of their power to preserve his life, if he was attacked by sickness. The Brasilians therefore freely set Mr. Cockram at liberty, kindly entertained the men, and furnished the ship with a sufficient cargo for England. This encouraged other merchants to trade to those parts of Brasil that were not yet in the possession of the Portuguese.

CHAP. II.

Captain Drake's voyage to the isthmus of Darien. He takes the town of Nombre de Dios, marches over land for Panama, plunders Santa Cruz, lands at Rio Francisco, and seizes a great number of mules laden with gold and silver. His return to Plymouth.

IN the following reign the English were unsuccessfully employed in discovering either a north-east or a north-west passage, in hopes of grasping the whole trade of the Indies; and by directing all their strength that way, neglected making those discoveries that might have been attended with success. But in the reign of queen Elizabeth, who made the naval power her peculiar care, discoveries

were carried on with fresh vigour; and between the years 1562 and 1568, captain John Hawkins made three voyages to the West Indies, and, in all but the last, had very great success. In the year 1572, captain Francis Drake also made his famous expedition to the West Indies.

This gentleman, who had accompanied his kinsman, sir John Hawkins, in his last expedition, set sail from Plymouth on the 24th of May, 1572, in the Pasca, of seventy tons burden, with the Swan, of two hundred and fifty tons, commanded by his brother, John Drake. He had on board seventy-three men and boys, and had not only a good stock of ammunition and a year's provisions, but had three pinnaces stowed on board, in pieces, that might, as occasion required, be speedily joined together. He made the Canary islands on the 2d of June, and on the 29th passed between Guadaloupe and Dominica, on the south side of which they cast anchor; finding several cottages formed of the boughs of palm-trees, but no sign of inhabitants, he inferred that these were occasionally the residence of fishermen.

Having staid here three days, he weighed anchor, and steering towards the main-land of America, made Port Pheasant, where he erected his pinnaces, and was soon after joined by James Rawse, in a bark belonging to the Isle of Wight, with thirty men. They left this place on the 22d of July, and three days after took two small vessels from Nombre de Dios, laden with planks; by which they learned, that some soldiers were daily expected at that town from the governor of Panama, to protect the inhabitants from the Symerons, a people inhabiting the country between that place and Panama. These were descended from those, who, flying from the

cruelty of the Spaniards, about eighty years before, had, by degrees, formed themselves into a nation.

Drake having treated these people civilly, set them on shore, judging it impossible for them to convey any intelligence about him to the town, before his arrival, it being at a considerable distance by land; then taking fifty-three men, with drums, trumpets, and warlike stores, he left the rest of his company with their ships, under the command of captain Rawse, in a secure and secret situation, and proceeded in the pinnaces, keeping all day close under the shore, and rowing hard at night, till he entered the harbour. He there got between the town and a small ship just arrived from Spain, which he forced to the other side of the bay, to prevent her giving the alarm, and then landing without resistance, marched up to the fort, where there was but one man, who fled to alarm the place. On the captain's entrance, he found no more than six brass guns and a few culverins, which he dismounted.

Drake, leaving a few of his men to keep possession of the fort, and some others to guard the pinnaces, marched to a high ground, where he divided the sailors who accompanied him, into two parties of sixteen men each. One under the command of John Oxenham, he ordered to enter the east end of the town, near the market-place, while he himself, with drums beating and colours flying, led the rest up the principal street.

The inhabitants had been drawn up near the governor's house, to cover the gate leading to Panama, in order to secure a retreat; but were so terrified at the sight of the English, that, after firing two or three times, they threw down their arms,

and fled with the utmost precipitation. The alarm bell still continued ringing, but Drake, ordering it to be silenced, marched towards the royal treasury, which was then immensely rich; and the door of the store-house being in the confusion left open, saw a prodigious number of large silver bars, none of which the men were allowed to meddle with; but unhappily at this instant, a violent storm of thunder, lightning and rain, damaged their arms, and filled the men with apprehensions that their pinnaces were in danger. This threw them into confusion; however, Drake boldly insisted on their proceeding, and would doubtless have executed his design of plundering the treasury; but becoming faint through loss of blood, occasioned by a wound in his leg, which he had hitherto concealed, he was with much difficulty persuaded to have it dressed, and to be carried on board one of the pinnaces. This obliged the rest to retire to their vessels, with the loss of one man.

They now proceeded to a small but plentiful island, about two leagues from the town, greatly mortified at leaving such immense wealth behind them. They there staid to refresh themselves, and then proceeded to their ships, which they reached on the first of August; when captain Rawse, having no hopes of their meeting with success, since they were now certainly discovered all along the coast, resolved to leave him.

Drake, having staid here six days, sailed for Carthagena, when he soon found, by the firing of the ordnance, and ringing of the bells, that he was discovered; he, however, seized an outward-bound ship, of two hundred and forty tons burden, that lay in the road, and two smaller vessels, dispatched

thither from Nombre de Dios, to give notice of his being on the coast: he, however, treated those on board with great civility, and set them on shore.

He now resolved to sink the Swan, and knowing that this would be opposed by the sailors, prevailed on the carpenter to bore three holes in her bottom, when the water pouring in, they removed her cargo, and then set fire to her, to prevent her falling into the enemy's hands.

This being done, he appointed his brother to command his own ship, and went himself on board one of the pinnaces. He soon found a convenient fertile spot, on the coast of Darien, proper for erecting tents for his men, and preparing such articles as he most wanted. As they were here covered from view, and the vessel concealed in a neighbouring creek, he hoped to raise a belief, that he had entirely quitted the coast.

Having staid here till the eighth of September, he left his brother to take care of the ship, and, taking part of the men, proceeded with two pinnaces for Rio Grande, keeping as much as possible out of sight. He landed his men about two leagues to the westward of Carthagena, where the Indians supplied him with cattle and other fresh provisions, for which he gave them some trifles in exchange. The next day he made the mouth of a river, where they had a terrible storm, and after that was over, the men were much pestered with musketos; but defended themselves against their attacks by rubbing their bodies with lemon-juice.

They found the channel of the Rio Grande twenty-three fathoms deep, and so broad that the eye could scarcely reach from shore to shore. They here saw several houses, and perceiving a Spaniard beckon-

ing to them, made towards the land; but he, finding that they were not his countrymen, as he had at first imagined, betook himself to flight. They, however, landed, and found some cheese, white rusk, bacon, several sorts of sweetmeats, and a considerable quantity of sugar, out of which they supplied their vessels with as much as they wanted.

Drake now sailed back to his brother, and in his voyage boarded several vessels, in hopes of finding gold, but they happened to be laden only with provisions and other necessaries. Of these he took a considerable quantity, and disposed of them in an island, in such a manner, that if any part should be surprised by the Spaniards, there would still be a sufficient supply left, in case he should stand in need of it. During his absence his brother John had concluded a league with the Symerons, whom he promised to assist against the Spaniards, from whom they had lately taken a large quantity of gold and silver, and thrown it into the river; for as they set no value on that metal, they had no other motive for seizing it than that of exasperating their enemies.

As it was unusual for the Spaniards to bring down their treasures during the rainy season, which now approached, captain Drake now resolved to cruize in those seas till the time of their setting out, during which he plundered a great number of ships, but his brother John was unfortunately slain while gallantly boarding a frigate. Upon this he moored his ship, and resolved to appear no more till the Spanish treasurer was set out for Nombre de Dios. However, while he thus lay by, several of his men died of calentures, among whom was his brother, Joseph Drake,

The captain being at length informed by the Symerons that the treasurer was set out, he resolved, by their assistance, to march over land to Panama; these people not only consenting to serve him for guides, but to carry a large quantity of provisions; and when those failed, they engaged to supply him with more, by the help of their bows and arrows.

They set out on the 3d of February, 1573, being forty-eight in company, eighteen of whom were English, who carried nothing but their arms. On the third day of their march they arrived at a town belonging to the Symerons, situated on the side of a hill, near a river, and encompassed with a high mud wall. The inhabitants made a very neat appearance; their dress differed but little from that of the Spaniards; and they received the strangers with great civility, and seemed to be in want of nothing, having all kinds of provision in abundance. This town was thirty-five leagues from Nombre de Dios, and fifty-five from Panama. It was constantly guarded against the Spaniards; and the inhabitants having the most implacable hatred against that nation, they often surprised and cut them off in the woods.

After staying here one night, Drake continued his march; at the end of ten days, he ascended a very high hill, from whence he had a view of the south sea, which he determined to navigate. Panama being now frequently in sight, he thought it prudent to keep his men as close together as possible, the success of the expedition depending on their being concealed, and struck out of the common road, until he came within a short distance of Panama. Here captain Drake sent a Symeron in disguise, to obtain intelligence, who soon returned

with the information, that the treasurer of Lima was to set out that very night, with his family, for Nombre de Dios, in order to embark for Spain, attended by fourteen mules, some of which were laden with gold, others with silver, and one with valuable jewels; and that the same night two caravans would pass the same way, with fifty mules in each, laden with provisions and a small quantity of silver. This was soon after confirmed by a sentinel, whom they were so fortunate as to seize.

Upon receiving this intelligence, Drake concealed half his men fifty paces from the highway, while the other half, under Oxenham, were posted at the same distance from the road, on the opposite side. When the first caravan, consisting of mules laden with provisions, approached, one of the men, who had drank too much, got up to see them, though the captain had given strict orders, that not the least notice should be taken of them; and this man being dressed in a white shirt, which was the mark of distinction worn by the English, was perceived by a Spaniard, who gave the alarm; the treasurer immediately turned out of the road, and only the mules with provisions came forward; some of these they seized, but, to their great mortification, got only two horse-loads of silver.

Having staid here to refresh themselves, they mounted the mules, and proceeded towards Santa Cruz. On approaching this town they were met by a party of soldiers, who summoned them to surrender, and promised to give them kind treatment. The English laughed at this proposal, and received the enemy's fire, which they so effectually returned, that they put them to flight, when briskly following the pursuit, they entered the town with them;

the Symerons supporting them through the action with the greatest bravery.

Santa Cruz then consisted of about fifty neat houses, and had warehouses for receiving the goods, which were brought thither from Nombre de Dios, up the river Chagre, and from thence carried by mules to Panama. Having divided the plunder he found in the town, equally among his own men and the Symerons, Drake began to be uneasy for his ship, from which he had been absent above a fortnight. He therefore returned to it with all the expedition possible, and to his great joy found every thing in as good order as he could desire.

The stock of provisions being nearly exhausted, Mr. Oxenham was dispatched with one of the vessels, to procure a supply, while Drake resolved to ply off the Cabezas, in hopes of seizing some of the treasure barks, that pass between Nicaragua and Veragua.

During this cruize captain Drake seized only a small vessel, in which was some gold, and a Genoese pilot, who informed him, that the English had every where spread an universal terror; while Oxenham took but one frigate, wherein was about two hundred cocks and hens, twenty-eight hogs, and a considerable quantity of maize. But what was of more consequence, he learned from the prisoners, that two galleys had been built at Nombre de Dios, in order to serve as a convoy to the Chagre fleet, the treasures of which now principally engrossed his attention.

While affairs were in this situation, they were alarmed by observing a sail bearing down upon them, which however proved to be a French ship, of about 80 tons burden, the crew whereof were in

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Capt.n Drake seizes the Spanish Treasures near Rio Francisco.

G. Shea sc.

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane.

great want of water, with which the captain ordered them to be supplied; and they, being informed of his designs, offered to join him, which after some deliberation was permitted.

Drake now leaving the two ships in a safe harbour, manned the frigate and two pinnaces, and steered to the Rio Francisco; at the mouth of which he left the frigate, and proceeded up the river, in the pinnaces, with all his forces. On landing, they marched forward with great regularity and silence, guided by the Symerons, until they came within a mile of the high road, when they halted and refreshed themselves. The next day they were agreeably surprised by the noise of the bells hung about the mules; they therefore set out to attack them, and found three caravans near together, two of which consisted of seventy mules each, and one of fifty, all laden with gold and silver. They had a guard of forty-five soldiers, who fired on the approach of the English and French, and then retreated. By this fire the French captain was wounded, and one Symeron killed. The English and French now made the best possible use of their time, loaded themselves with as many wedges of gold and silver as they could carry, and having buried the rest in the sand, retreated towards the river, leaving behind them the French captain, who had fainted in the woods with the loss of blood, and a French sailor, who had overloaded himself with gold.

The next day they reached the Rio Francisco, where not finding the pinnaces, they began to fear they were lost; which appeared probable, as seven Spanish pinnaces appeared hovering at a distance; but a sudden gust of wind, attended with rain, obliged the Spaniards to sheer off.

Captain Drake was much concerned at the apprehension, that, if his pinnaces were taken, the men would be put to the torture, to make them discover where his vessels were; but being sensible, that, though this should be the case, it would be some time before they could reach the ships, he set about making a raft, in order to endeavour to get on board before the enemy. In this attempt he was assisted only by one Englishman, two hardy Frenchmen, and a Symeron, who generously endeavoured to persuade him, in case the ships were destroyed, to live among those of his own nation, who would do all in their power to serve him. Having lashed the raft pretty securely, they fixed a kind of rudder, and erected a sail made of a biscuit-bag, and then committed themselves to the mercy of the sea, sitting up to the waist, and sometimes to the arm-pits, in water; and after a fatiguing voyage of six hours, observed the pinnaces lying behind a point, where they had cast anchor.

Upon this joyful sight he ran the raft on shore, and went to them by land, where, after keeping them for some time in suspense, he informed them of his success, and the loss of their captain and a sailor. He was now told, that the pinnaces were prevented from steering up the Rio Francisco at the time appointed, by a hard gale of wind. Drake immediately returned up the river, and took in his comrades with the treasure, and then steered directly for the frigate and the ships, which having come up with, he divided the gold and silver, to their mutual satisfaction, equally between the English and French.

A few days after, captain Drake sent a detachment of twelve English and sixteen Symerons, to

bring away more of the treasure; but they could find only thirteen bars of silver, and some wedges of gold, the rest having been discovered and carried away. This they brought off, together with one of the Frenchmen, who, though left behind, made his escape from the Spaniards.

Drake now determined to return to England; he therefore dismissed the French ship, and steered to cape Cabezas, taking several Spanish vessels, laden with provisions, in his passage. At this last place he staid seven days, and gave the Symerons all the iron work, of which they were extremely fond; and giving to one of them a very handsome cutlass, he was, in return, presented with four wedges of gold. These Drake no sooner received, than he threw them into the common stock, declaring that he thought it unjust not to share with those who had assisted in fitting him out, and had bought the cutlass, the price for which it was sold.

After leaving these friendly people, they captured some small vessels; and, on their arrival at cape St. Anthony, took in a supply of turtle. Being soon after in want of water, there happily fell such a prodigious shower of rain, as afforded them a sufficient quantity, and relieved them from the necessity of touching, as they intended, at Newfoundland. They then stretched over from Florida to the islands of Scilly, and came to an anchor in Plymouth harbour, on the 9th of August, 1573. The people being at church on their arrival, instantly hurried out, and ran to the shore, to welcome him and his men on their happy return from this successful expedition.

CHAP. III.

Sir Humphry Gilbert obtains a patent for settling the continent of North America. Takes formal possession of Newfoundland, but is lost on his return to England.

DRAKE'S great success so encouraged others to follow his example, that, in a very short time, the English privateers made various voyages to all parts of America; and projects, that, in the former age, would have been thought impracticable, in this were carried into execution, at the expence of private persons, who were countenanced, but not assisted by the crown. Among these, none was so great a proof of maritime skill, and so honourable in every respect to the nation, as the expedition of captain Francis Drake, in 1757, in which he sailed round the globe; this voyage will be inserted among the most remarkable of those excellent mariners who have also encompassed the earth.

Some years after this voyage, sir Humphry Gilbert, a gentleman of Devonshire, represented to queen Elizabeth the expediency of settling all those countries on the continent of America, which had formerly been discovered by Sebastian Cabot, in order to prevent their falling into the hands of the French: on which her majesty granted him letters patent, to discover, plant, settle, and even to fortify and build castles, in any of the northern countries not then in the possession of any Christian prince. Thus encouraged, he applied to his friends, in order to form a society capable of carrying this design into execution. However, in this he encountered many difficulties, notwithstanding which he put to

sea; but the voyage proved very unsuccessful, and was attended with the loss of one of his best ships. After this severe blow he sold his estate, in order to furnish the necessary expences of another squadron, in which several gentlemen of rank and fortune agreed to accompany him.

This squadron consisted of the following vessels, the Delight, of one hundred and twenty tons, on board of which sir Humphry embarked; the bark Raleigh, fitted out by Mr. Walter Raleigh, of two hundred tons; the Golden Hind, of forty tons; the Swallow, of forty tons; and the Squirrel, of ten tons; having on board two hundred and sixty men, among whom were many shipwrights, masons, carpenters, smiths, miners and refiners.

It was resolved by the proprietors, that the fleet should sail to Newfoundland, and having taken in provisions there, proceed to the south, and not to pass by any river or bay worthy of notice, without examining it. On the 11th of June, 1583, this fleet set sail from Plymouth; but on the 13th, the Raleigh, commanded by captain Butler, parted company, under pretence that the captain and his men were suddenly taken ill of a contagious disease. On the 30th of July they saw land in about the latitude of 51°; thence coasting along it to the south, on the 3d of August entered St. John's harbour in Newfoundland, where they found the Squirrel, which had been separated from them, riding at anchor in the mouth of the harbour, having been refused entrance by the vessels that were fishing within it, to the number of thirty-six sail, of different nations.

Sir Humphry now sending his boat, to inform the masters of the fishing barks, that he had a commis-

sion from the queen to take possession of those lands for the crown of England, they submitted to the levying a tax of provisions upon each ship, for supplying the wants of his squadron, and he entered the harbour.

The next day sir Humphry and his company were conducted on shore by the masters of the English fishing vessels, and, on the 5th, having caused a tent to be set up in the view of the ships in the harbour, and being attended by all under his command, he summoned the merchants and masters, both English and foreigners, to be present at his taking a formal and solemn possession of these territories. These being assembled, he caused his commission, under the great seal of England, to be read, and interpreted to those unacquainted with the English language; which being done, he declared, that he took possession of the harbour of St. John, and two hundred leagues of the adjacent country, investing her majesty with the title and dignity thereof, and then had a turf of the soil delivered to him, in token of taking possession also for himself and heirs. After this he took in a supply of provisions, in order to proceed on his discories; but some of his men dying, and others deserting, the number of his people was so lessened, as to oblige him to leave the Swallow behind.

Sir Humphry now went on board the Squirrel, that small vessel being most proper for discovering the coast; and on the 20th of August sailed from the harbour of St. John with three ships, the Delight, the Golden Hind and the Squirrel. The next night they reached Cape Race, which is twenty-five leagues distant, and from thence sailed about eighty-seven leagues towards Cape Breton,

On the 29th they had a violent storm with rain and so thick a mist, that they could not see a cable's length before them. Early the next morning they found themselves encompassed with shoals and sands, on which the Delight struck, and her stern and hind-quarter were soon beat to pieces; the Golden Hind and the pinnace, however, bore away to the south, and with much difficulty got clear of the shoals. In the Delight there unhappily perished captain Maurice Brown, with near one hundred persons; fourteen of the crew only escaping in an open boat to Newfoundland.

Sir Humphry, discouraged by these disasters, and his men being in want of necessaries, proposed to return to England, having, in his own opinion, made discoveries sufficient to procure the assistance necessary for a new voyage in the spring. His people were a little mortified at this proposal, but on hearing his reasons, altered their course. On the 2d of September they passed in sight of Cape Race, and had afterwards such bad weather, with high seas, that the people in the Hind frequently expected to see those in the Squirrel swallowed up, notwithstanding which, Sir Humphry could not be persuaded to leave her. On the 9th, the storm increasing, he was again pressed to leave the pinnace, but his answer was, 'We are as near to heaven at sea as by land.' About midnight the Squirrel being ahead of the Golden Hind, her lights were at once extinguished, and, it was supposed she sunk that very instant, for she was never heard of more. The Golden Hind, however, arrived safe at Falmouth on the 22d of September, after having lost only one man in this unfortunate expedition.

CHAP. IV.

Sir Walter Raleigh gets the patent renewed, and sends two barks to make discoveries. The English land in the island of Wokoken, and trade with the natives. Unsuccessful attempts to establish a settlement in Virginia.

AFTER sir Humphry Gilbert's miscarriage and loss, sir Walter Raleigh, his half-brother by the mother's side, procured a renewal of the patent, and making choice of two experienced naval-officers, captains Philip Amadas and Arthur Barlow, fitted out two small barks. Sir Walter had observed, that all the attempts hitherto made had failed, by the adventurers pursuing their discoveries from the north; he chose therefore to proceed in another method, and considering all the lands on the continent of America, from the last settlement of the Spaniards to sixty degrees north, as lying within his grant, he resolved to settle those first, which lay nearest their settlements.

The above two barks sailed from the west of England on the 27th of April, 1584, and, passing the Canaries, fell in with the coast of Florida on the 2d of July, and having sailed forty leagues along the shore, came on the 13th to a river, where they cast anchor, landed, and took possession of the country, in right of the queen, and for the use of the proprietors.

This place they afterwards found to be the island of Wokoken, on the coast of the country since called Virginia, in thirty-four degrees north latitude. In this island, which is about twenty miles in length, and six in breadth, they found deer,

Sir Walter Raleigh taking Possession of Virginia

J. Marten sculp.t

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

rabbits, hares, fowls, vines, cedars, pines, cypress, sassafras and mastic-trees. It was the third day before they saw any of the natives, but then a little boat with three of them appeared; and one of them going on shore, the English rowed up to him, when he not only waited their coming, without any signs of fear, but readily went on board, where they gave him a shirt and a hat, with some meat and wine, which he seemed to like. After he had with apparent satisfaction narrowly viewed the barks with all that were in them, he went in his own boat to about a quarter of a mile's distanbe, where he employed himself in fishing, and in half an hour loaded his boat with fish, as deep as it could swim, and then returned to the point of the land; where, to show his gratitude, he divided it into two parts, and making signs that he designed it for the two barks, departed. After this, the natives from the continent frequently repaired to the ships, and exchanged several sorts of skins, white coral, and some pearls, for toys made of tin, and other baubles of inconsiderable value.

The day after that in which they had seen the three Indians, several boats appeared in view, and in one of these was the brother of the king, attended by forty or fifty men, whose features were tolerably agreeable. The prince made up to the English, who gave him and four of his chiefs, presents of several toys, which he appropriated to himself, letting them know, that none there had a right to any thing but him. Two days after, they showed him their merchandize, of which nothing seemed to please him more than a pewter dish, for which he gave twenty deer-skins; and, making a hole in the rim, hung it over his neck for a breast-

it was not long before sir Walter Raleigh resolved to fit out a more considerable fleet than had hitherto been employed in such undertakings. He was desirous of commanding in this expedition; but being jealous that his absence might be prejudicial to his interest at court, he committed the conduct of this second enterprize to his lieutenant, sir Richard Greenville, who, on the 8th of April, 1585, set sail from Plymouth, with seven ships, fitted out by a company,† of which himself and several gentlemen were members.

On the 26th of June he anchored at Wokoken, and, in August following, began to plant on the island of Roenocke, five miles distant from the continent, where 180 men were landed, under the command of Ralph Lane, then appointed governor, and captain Philip Amadis, who was constituted admiral of the new colony, though it does not appear that a bark was left with him.

Sir Richard did not remain above three weeks longer in those seas; for having made some discoveries to the southward, and having traded with the Indians for pearls, skins, furs, and other commodities, he sailed on the 25th of August, on his return to England, in which he took a very rich prize; so that this voyage appeared to the nation, as no less prosperous than the former, and the new Virginia company began to entertain very sanguine hopes of their undertaking.

crown of England, from the southern limits of Georgia, agreeable to the patents granted to sir Humphry Gilbert, and his brother sir Walter Raleigh.

† This company was the first of that kind established in Europe. It was afterwards incorporated by king James I., by the name of The Governor and Company of the West-Indies; but was dissolved by king Charles I., for mal-administration,

Let us now return to the first planters in Virginia, and give an account of what happened to the first colony the English established there, or in any part of America. Sir Richard Greenville was no sooner sailed, than the people whom he left behind applied themselves with diligence to what had been recommended to them by sir Walter Raleigh, which was discovering the continent; and with this view they travelled 80 miles south, and 150 north, from that part of the main which was opposite to their island; but in these expeditions venturing indiscreetly too high up the river, and too far into the country, the Indian chiefs grew jealous of them; first began to be weary of their company, and then to cut off such of the stragglers as fell into their hands; and they even formed a plan for destroying all the rest, but were happily prevented.

Meanwhile the company in England were not so careful as they ought to have been, in sending them supplies; and the English, not understanding the nature of the climate, neglected to gather food in the proper season, by which means they were reduced to great distress. The natives never after kept faith with them, but, watching all opportunities to cut them off, obliged them to be very cautious in landing on the continent, and prevented them from procuring a supply from thence; they however endured every hardship with incredible resolution, and extended their discoveries near 100 miles along the coast. The Indians they kept in awe, by threatening them with the return of their companions, and a great reinforcement; but no ships coming from England all that winter, nor in the spring following, nor even in the summer,

they despaired of being able to support themselves any longer. The natives, seeing them in a manner abandoned by their countrymen, began to view them with contempt, and the English expected every day to be sacrificed to their cruelty.

In this distress, their chief employment was looking out to sea, in hopes of finding some means of escape, or of obtaining relief; but in August, when they were almost spent with want, watching and hunger, they, to their great joy, discovered sir Francis Drake's fleet, then returning from an expedition against the Spaniards, in North America. This great man, having been commanded by the queen to visit this plantation, and to see what encouragement or assistance it wanted, sailed up directly to the island. Their first petition was, to grant them a supply of men and provisions, with a small ship or bark, that, in case they should not be able to maintain themselves where they were, they might embark in it for England.

Sir Francis having granted their request, they set all hands to work, to fit the ship he had given them, and to furnish her with stores sufficient for a long stay; but a storm drove her from her anchors to sea, and she was so materially injured, as to be totally unfit for their use. This discouraged them so much, that though sir Francis offered them another ship, they were afraid to stay, and earnestly entreated him to take them with him, which he did, and this put an end to the first settlement.

This misfortune was far from being imputable to the negligence of sir Walter Raleigh; for he had continually pressed the company to reflect on the necessity of supporting the colony in time: and so solicitous was he to carry this point, that finding

the equipment of the fleet, which was preparing under the command of sir Richard Greenville, went on but slowly, he proposed, that the first ship that was completely manned and equipped, should be sent, without staying for the rest. This was done: but when the vessel, which was well stocked with provisions, ammunition, and all manner of necessaries, arrived at the island of Roenocke, it was found deserted; and therefore, after a short stay, returned to England.

In about a fortnight after came sir Richard Greenville, with his squadron of three small vessels, and, to his great disappointment, found not a man on the island. He however resolved to make another settlement; and, for this purpose, landed fifty men, gave them directions to build a fort for their defence, furnished them with every necessary for two years, and then set sail for England, after giving them the strongest assurances, that they should be constantly and regularly supplied.

This colony was, however, more unfortunate than the first; for the Indians, taking advantage of the smallness of their number, and the difficulties they had to struggle with, attacked and cut them off: so that when Mr. White came thither with three ships, and considerable supplies, on the 22d of June, 1587, he found the fort demolished, some huts they had erected near it destroyed, and not far from it, the skeleton of a man. In all these disasters, Manteo, an Indian, who had been formerly brought over to England, from whence he safely returned, remained firm to the English interest; and from him Mr. White learned the fate of this colony.

The misfortunes, which had attended these two

settlements, would certainly have discouraged a man of less constancy and fortitude than Mr. White; but he had a commission to be governor, and sir Walter had strongly recommended him to keep possession of the place. He therefore erected a new fort, and choosing eleven of the most sensible persons he had brought along with him, constituted a regular corporation, to which he gave the title of the Governor and Court of Assistants of the city of Raleigh, in Virginia. On the 13th of August, Manteo, the faithful Indian, was christened, and created by the governor, lord of Dassumonpeak, an Indian nation so called, as a reward for his fidelity and service to the English; and, on the 18th of the same month, was born the first child that was the issue of Christian parents in that place. She was the daughter of Mr. Annias Dare, and, after the name of the country, was called Virginia.

Good government and industry soon rendered Mr. White and his men formidable to the Indians, who courted their friendship, and made leagues with the corporation, which they kept or broke, as they thought themselves too weak or too strong for the English; who, notwithstanding their seeming prosperity, underwent great hardships, for want of receiving proper supplies from Europe. Yet so far from repenting of their undertaking, or desiring to return, that they disputed for the liberty of remaining at Roenocke, and obliged Mr. White, their governor, to return to England, and solicit the company to send them supplies of men and provisions.

Mr. White consented to negociate this affair, and leaving a hundred and fifty men in the place, set sail for England; but two years elapsed after

his arrival before he could obtain a grant of the necessary supplies. At length, however, he had three ships fitted out for him, with provisions and men for the colony. On the 13th of August he arrived at Cape Hattaras, and landing on the island of Roenocke, found, by letters cut on trees in large characters, that the English were removed. On several of these trees they found the letters C.R.O., and on one of the palisades of the fort, cut in large capital letters, the word Croatan, which is an island about twenty leagues to the south of Roenocke. On this they embarked, in order to search for the garrison in that island, but were scarcely on board before a storm separated the ships, which, losing their anchors and cables, durst not venture in with the shore; but all of them shifting for themselves, sailed back to England and Ireland.

This misfortune proved the ruin of the third settlement, of which it does not appear that the company took any farther care, or made any new attempt for preserving the possession of a country, the advantages of which had been painted in such strong colours to the crown of England: though a long time after they sent several ships to visit the coast, and trade with the natives.*

CHAP. V.

Davis's voyages in search of a north-west passage; the discoveries made by him in North America.

WHILE these proceedings were carrying on in the south, a design of attempting to discover a north-west passage was formed by some traders in

* See Chap. VIII. and IX.

the west of England, and the same project being set on foot in London, they both united, when captain John Davis was appointed to conduct the enterprise, and to have under his command the Sunshine of London, a bark of fifty tons, with twenty-three persons on board, and the Moonshine of Dartmouth, of thirty-five tons, and nineteen men. With this small force he sailed from Dartmouth on the 7th of June, 1585; and, on the 14th of the same month was forced into one of the Scilly islands, where, being detained a fortnight, he gave a proof of his activity and industry, by drawing a chart of those islands, which at that time was much wanted.

Captain Davis with his two vessels sailed from thence on the 28th, and continued his course to the north-west; on the 19th of July discovered a strong current, which set northwards, and sailing about half a league into a very calm sea, they heard a prodigious roaring, as if it had been the beach of some shore, which was the more terrible, as the weather was so foggy, that they could not see from one ship to the other, though they were only at a small distance. On this the Moonshine was ordered to sound; but not being able to find ground with a line of upwards of three hundred fathoms, the captain and master proceeded in a boat to discover the cause, when they found it to be several large islands of ice, floating in the sea; they got out upon one of these, and when they returned to their boat, carried several large pieces of ice with them, which melted into very good fresh water.

On the 20th the fog dispersing, they discovered land, which resembled a sugar-loaf, and made so uncomfortable, or rather so horrid an appearance, that captain Davis called it the Land of Desolation.

On the 21st they were forced to steer to the south, to clear themselves of the ice, after which they ran along the shore.

On the 24th, the captain, to encourage the men, caused their allowance to be increased; but the weather was far from being very cold, for, though it was pretty sharp when the wind blew from the shore, it was very hot when it blew from the sea. On the 25th they bore away north-west, and continued their course for four days; and, on the 29th discovered land in the latitude of 64° 15′, with the sea quite free from ice, and the weather very temperate. Upon viewing the coast, they found many pleasant bays and commodious harbours; and landing on one of the small islands, in order to search for wood and water, and gain a knowledge of the country, they had evident marks of its being inhabited, for they found a small shoe, several pieces of leather sewed with sinews, and a piece of fur like beaver.

They went next to another island, where getting upon a high rock, they were seen by the people of the country, who set up a most hideous yell, which the English perceiving, hallooed to their companions, to let them know what had happened. Upon this, captain Bruton, of the Moonshine, came to their assistance, with some of his seamen. Shortly after their arrival, ten canoes full of the natives came from a neighbouring island, two of which advanced so near the shore, that the English on land could easily talk with them. The language of these people was guttural, and their pronunciation harsh and unpleasant. One of them, however, seemed inclined to come on shore, but first pointed to the sun, and then struck his breast so hard that

they could hear the blow; upon which, Mr. John Elias, master of the Moonshine, was appointed to treat with him; and going therefore to the sea-side, pointed to the sun, and struck his breast as the savage had done, who at length ventured on shore, and they threw him caps, stockings, gloves, and such other things as they thought would please him; but the night drawing on they took their leave on both sides.

The next morning thirty-seven canoes rowing by the ships, called to the English to go on shore; but the latter being in no great haste, one of the Indians leaped upon land, and ran to the top of a rock, where, to show his joy, he danced and beat a drum. The English then manned their boats, and proceeded to the water-side, where they waited in their canoes; and after the formal ceremony of swearing by the sun, the natives made no scruple of trading with them, but, on the contrary, seemed kind, and even good-natured. They readily parted with any thing they were asked for, and were content with whatever was given them, showing neither signs of covetousness nor deceit. The English bought five of their canoes, and several of their stockings and gowns, some of which were made of seal, and others of bird-skins, all of them well dressed, and neatly made; so that it plainly appeared they had some trades among them. They had plenty of furs, and seeing that they pleased the English, informed them, by signs, that they would go up into the country and bring them more; but the wind proving fair in the night, captain Davis steered still farther to the north-west; and on the 6th of August entered a very fine road, free from ice, in the latitude of 66° 46′, where they

Captain Davis's first Interview with the North American Indians.

Maguire Sculp.

Dublin. Published by J. Christie 17, Rose Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

landed under a high mountain, the clefts of which shone like gold.

After having taken a view of the place, Mr. Davis began to think of naming the parts he had discovered; he therefore called the mountain, Mount Raleigh; the road where the ship lay, Totness Road; the sound at the foot of the mountain, Exeter Sound; the north foreland, Dyer's Cape; and the south foreland, Walsingham. They here discovered four white bears, of a prodigious size, two of which they killed, and brought on board; the fore-paw of one of them measured fourteen inches. They saw a raven upon Mount Raleigh, and, at the bottom of the hill, found some shrubs, and flowers like primroses: the coast, however, was very mountainous, and entirely barren, affording neither wood nor grass, nor even earth; but the mountains were composed of a kind of stone, the finest they had ever seen. The inland parts of the country were probably fertile, since the bears were very fat, and yet it appeared, upon opening their stomachs, that they were not carnivorous.

On the 8th they weighed from Mount Raleigh, and three days after came to the most southerly point of the land, which they called, the Cape of God's Mercy; and here they were surprised by a very thick fog, on the breaking up of which, they found themselves in a strait, that was, in some places, sixty miles broad, and, in others, ninety; the weather was very fine and temperate, and the water of the same colour with that of the ocean, which filled them with hopes of finding a passage. They sailed sixty leagues through this strait, and discovered several small islands in it, by which they sailed, one bark taking the north, and the

other the south side; but the wind changing, and the weather growing foggy and foul, they were forced to lie by for five days, in the passage since called Davis's Straits.

On the 14th they went on shore, and saw evident marks of the country's being inhabited; for they found part of a stone wall, and a human skull. The next day they heard a great howling on shore, which they supposed to be made by the wolves; but instead of wolves they found only dogs, that came running to the boat, wagging their tails, and showing other signs of joy, as it is usual with those animals at the sight of men: there were twenty of them, and being of the size of mastiffs, with short ears and long bushy tails, the seamen were afraid of them, and shot two, one of which had a leathern collar: they also found two sledges, one made of several boards, and the other of whalebone. They likewise saw larks, ravens and partridges.

On the 17th they went on shore again, and in a place resembling an oven, which was built with stones, they found a small canoe, an image, a bird made of bone, beads for necklaces, and other trifles. The coast made no very promising appearance, as having neither wood nor grass; but the rocks were of a fine bright stone-like marble, beautified with veins of different colours.

Captain Davis was extremely pleased with the appearance of this strait, which they considered to be the channel into the South Seas, in search whereof they came. It was therefore resolved to continue the prosecution of their discoveries; but the wind changing, they were obliged to remain at anchor; and the weather growing very foul, they on the 24th hoisted sail for England. On the 10th of

September they fell in with the Land of Desolation; on the 27th, they had sight of the English coast, and, in a storm at night, were parted from the Moonshine. However, on the 30th, captain Davis returned to Dartmouth, where he found the Moonshine, which had arrived in that harbour two hours before.

Mr. Davis's owners were so well satisfied with his conduct in this voyage, that they procured him an audience of secretary Walsingham, who not only greatly approved of the enterprize, and of the manner in which it was conducted, but recommended his completing the discovery: to this he was also pressed, by those concerned in the above undertaking, and by some merchants of Exeter, who desired to join in the expences necessary for a second expedition: and he having willingly consented, the sollowing squadron was fitted out; the Mermaid of 120 tons, the Sunshine of 60, the Moonshine of 55, and the North Star of 13 tons.

Captain Davis set sail with the above squadron from Dartmouth, on the 7th of May, 1586; and, having coasted the south side of Ireland, steered to the north-west, till he came into the latitude of 60 degrees, when he divided the squadron, and ordered the Sunshine and the North Star to seek a passage northward, between Greenland and Ireland, to the latitude of 80 degrees, if not hindered by land. He left them on the 7th of June, and on the 15th discovered land, in 60 degrees latitude, and in 47 degrees west longitude from the meridian of London. The ice lying some places ten, in others twenty, and in some fifty leagues off the shore, obliged him to bear into 57 degrees, in order to get into a free sea.

On the 29th, after many storms, he again discovered land, in latitude 64 degrees, and in longitude 58° 30′, when bearing in with it, he set up a pinnace he had provided in the Mermaid, to serve as a scout in the discovery. The ships being within the sound, he sent the boats in search of shoal water, where he might come to anchor, which in this place is very difficult to be discovered. The natives, when they saw the English, came in their canoes, with shouts and cries; when observing in the boat some of those who were there last year, they rowed up to them, and taking hold of the oars, and hanging about the boat, expressed great joy, making signs that they knew them again. Captain Davis then going on shore, with some of the crew, they had no sooner landed, than the friendly natives, leaping out of their canoes, ran to them, and embraced them with many demonstrations of joy. To each of them, captain Davis gave a knife, and they offered him skins in return, with an intimation that they were a present.

The next day the pinnace was landed on an island, in order to be finished; and while it was fitting up, the natives came in vast numbers, there being sometimes a hundred canoes at a time, bringing seal-skins, stag-skins, white hares, small cod, dry capelin, with other fish, and some birds. Captain Davis sent one of the boats to search one part of the land, while he went to another, but first gave strict orders that no gun should be fired, nor injury offered to any of the natives. The men, whom the captain dispatched in the boat, passed ten miles within the snowy mountains, and came to a plain champaign country, like the moory and waste grounds in England, and went ten leagues up a

river, which in the narrowest place was two leagues over, but knew not how far it extended.

Meanwhile the captain took what he supposed another river, which, though at first it afforded a large inlet, yet proved only a deep bay, the end of which he reached in four hours; leaving the boat well manned, with the rest of the company he went three or four miles into the country, but saw nothing but snipes, ravens and small birds.

On the 3d of July captain Davis manned his boat, and attended by fifty canoes, entered another sound, to which the people invited him by signs; he consented, in hopes of finding their place of residence. They made signs that he should go into a warm place to sleep, on which he went on shore, and challenged them to leap with the English, to which they consented, but the English over-leaped them; afterwards they went to wrestling, when they were found to be strong and active, and to have such skill in this exercise, that they threw some of the English, who were good wrestlers.

These people were of good stature, and well proportioned; had broad faces, small eyes, wide mouths, and large lips, but their hands and feet were small and slender. They were very subject to bleed at the nose, and therefore stopped their noses with the hair of deer. One of them kindled a fire in the following manner; he took a piece of board, in which was a hole half through, and having smeared the end of a round stick with train-oil, put it into the hole, and then turning it round with a piece of leather, something in the manner of our turners, by the violence of the motion soon procured fire, on which he laid a heap of turf, and then with many words and strange gestures, put several things into

the flames, which the English supposed to be intended as a sacrifice. After this the captain was desired to go into the smoke, which he declined; and they likewise refusing, he thrust one of them into it, then commanded his men to tread out the fire, and spurn it into the sea, to show their contempt for this sorcery. They eat their meat raw, but lived mostly on fish, which they caught with nets made of whale-fins. They made war on their neighbours, for many of them were severely wounded; and they let the English know, by signs, that they received them on the continent. Though they behaved with great simplicity, they appeared extremely addicted to thieving, particularly of iron, for they cut away the Moonshine's boat from her stern, and also the cables and cloth, that were left to be aired, stole the oars, a caliver, a spear, a sword, and several other things, which so exasperated the sailors, that they desired the captain to dissolve this new friendship, on which he ordered a caliver to be shot among them, and immediately after a falcon, when they were so affrighted at the noise, that they instantly fled. However, about ten hours after, they returned, making signs of peace; and this being granted, they brought seal-skins and salmon-peal; but on their seeing iron, could not forbear stealing again, which the captain perceiving, commanded that they should not be treated with severity, and that his own people should be more careful in keeping what was under their charge.

On the 4th of July, the master of the Mermaid went to some islands, in order to take in wood, and found a grave, which contained several bodies, only covered with seal-skins, and a cross laid over them.

On the 17th, the captain went on shore in his new pinnace, and with most of the company walked to the top of a high mountain, for the purpose of taking a view of the country; but the number and height of the mountains bounded the prospect in such a manner, that they could see but a small distance; they therefore returned to their pinnace, where they observed a water-spout, which at that time was considered a very strange and astonishing sight.

On the 19th, they returned to their ships, when the sailors loudly complained of the natives, who had not only stolen an anchor, and cut one of the cables, but had thrown stones at them. The next day the captain went on shore, and treated the natives with great civility; which removing their apprehensions, at his return they followed him in their canoes. He then gave them some bracelets, and seven or eight of them going on board, were used kindly, and afterwards suffered to depart; yet the sun had no sooner set, than taking their slings, they threw stones into the Sunshine, one of which knocked down the boatswain. On this the English pursued them in their boats, and even fired on them; but they rowed so swiftly, that it was impossible to overtake them. A few days after, five of them came to make a new truce, among was the ringleader of the late disturbances, who, crying Iliaout, and striking his breast, offered a pair of gloves for sale; on which a knife was offered for them, when two of them coming up, the English dismissed one, and kept the other prisoner. They then pointed to him and his companions for their anchor, which, when they received, they told him by signs, that he should be set at liberty; but about

an hour after, the wind becoming fair, they set sail, and took him away with them. One of his companions followed the ship in a canoe, talked with him, and seemed to lament his condition; but the English using him well, and saying, Iliaout, that is, we mean no harm, in a short time he became a pleasant companion. Captain Davis gave him a new suit of frize, of the English fashion, with which he seemed highly pleased; he soon trimmed up his darts and all his fishing tools, was very expert at making oakum, and willingly set his hand to the rope.

On the 17th, being in the latitude of 63° 8′, they imagined they saw a very high land, which had several bays and capes, and therefore sent out their pinnace to examine it; but on her return, they were informed that it was no more than a prodigious mass of ice. This they coasted till the 30th, when the air grew so foggy, and the sea so full of ice, that all hopes of proceeding further were extinguished.

In this extremity the men beginning to grow sick and feeble entreated the captain, to preserve his life and theirs, to return to England: but though he commiserated their condition, he resolved to prosecute the discovery, by altering his course; and on the first of August discovered land, without either snow or ice, in the latitude of 66° 33′, and 70′ longitude from London.

On the 2d of August they anchored in a very good road, where they graved and re-victualled the Moonshine. They here found it very hot, and were much troubled with musketoes. The people of the country having caught a seal, tied bladders to him, and sent him to the English with the flood,

which the captain took as a friendly present. On the 5th captain Davis observing from the top of a hill three canoes under a rock, went to them, and found in them skins and darts, but took nothing, and left in every boat a silk point, a leaden bullet, and a pin. The next day the natives came to them without fear, and bartered with them for skins.

On the 11th, captain Davis departed, leaving the Mermaid at anchor, whose crew finding many occasions of discontent, were unwilling to proceed. Two days after, sailing west fifty leagues, they discovered land in 66° 19′, and the next day stood to the south. On the 18th, they discovered a promontory to the north-west, and, having no land to the south, were in great hopes of finding a passage. They then coasted an island towards the south, from 67 to 57°, and on the 28th, distrusting the weather, sailed ten leagues into a fine harbour, two leagues broad, with woods on both sides. Here they continued till the first of September, in which time they had two very great storms. The captain and some persons with him, went six miles up the country, and found the woods to consist of firs, pines, alders, yews and birch-trees. In this excursion they saw a black bear, and a great variety of birds, as pheasants aud partridges, wild-geese, black-birds, jays, thrushes, and other small birds.

They now coasted the shore with fair weather, and on the south anchored in a good road, among many islands. Eight leagues to the north of this place they had hopes of a passage, from observing a prodigious sea rolling between the two lands from the west, which they had a great desire to enter, but the wind was directly against them.

On the 6th they sent five young men on shore

to another island, to get some fish, which they had left there covered all night. But the natives, who had concealed themselves in the woods, suddenly assaulted the men; which being perceived from the ship, those on board let slip their cable, bore in to the shore, and twice discharged a double-barrelled musket at them, at the noise whereof they fled, after having killed two of the men with their arrows, and wounded two more; the other narrowly escaped by swimming, with an arrow shot through his arm.

Having that night a most dreadful storm, that lasted till the 10th, they unrigged their ship, and intended to cut down their masts; and as the cable of their sheet-anchor broke, they expected nothing but to drift on shore, and be murdered by the natives: but the storm abating, they recovered their anchor, and new moored the ship, when they were fully sensible of their great deliverance, two strands of the cable being broken.

On the 11th, the wind coming fair at west-northwest, they steered directly for England, where they arrived in the beginning of October. The Sunshine returned a few days before them: she had been at Iceland, and from thence to Greenland, afterwards to Estoitland, and thence to the Land of Desolation, where she traded with the people, and staid in the country twenty days. But they had lost the pinnace called the North Star, in a storm.

Captain Davis was afterwards sent on another voyage to make discoveries, with three ships, two of which were to be employed in fishing, while the other endeavoured to find out a passage to the South Seas; and in this voyage he reached the latitude of 73° north, where he found the sea all open,

7

and the strait forty leagues broad, whence he concluded, that the passage was most certain, and the execution easy, in which he was mistaken. However, these expeditions entitled England to the most northern coast of America.

We shall now mention an attempt made for fixing a settlement to the south.

CHAP. VI.

Sir Walter Raleigh sails to discover Guiana: arrives at the island of Trinidad, and burns the town of St. Joseph; difficulties met with in his further progress; enters the great river Oroonoko, proceeds up the banks of the Caroli, takes a view of the country and of the cataracts of that river, is conducted to a mine, rejoins his ships, burns several Spanish towns, and returns to England.

SIR Walter Raleigh had seen with regret the plantation of Virginia abandoned, and well knew that the want of immediate profit was the cause; he resolved, therefore, to settle a new colony in another part of America, that should be free from this inconvenience, and transfer the richest products of that country to the English, if they had but courage and conduct enough to bring them. In order to accomplish this, he inquired with the greatest diligence into the state of Guiana. He sought from books and papers all the assistance they could afford; and drew from personal informations, which were more in his power, than perhaps they ever were in that of any other man, all the assistance they were capable of giving.

In order to proceed cautiously in an affair of such importance, he sent before him one captain Whiddon, to take a view of the coast, that he might

be perfectly informed of its present state, and become more able to take the proper measures for overcoming those difficulties, which a man of less sagacity would have deemed insuperable. This gentleman performed his business effectually, though he met with some obstructions from the force, and much greater inconveniences from the frauds of the Spaniards, who were at that time endeavouring to secure to themselves this valuable country.

When sir Walter's project was ripe for execution, he was assisted by lord admiral Howard, and sir Robert Cecil; and, on the 6th of February, 1595, sailed from Plymouth, with only one bark besides the vessel in which he himself sailed, and on the 22d of March arrived at the island of Trinidad, where he spent a considerable time in viewing that island, in examining all its ports and havens, and even every little creek, with the greatest care and exactness.

There was a Spanish setttlement here, and a new city, called St. Joseph, governed by Antonio de Berreo, a man of courage and resolution, but very unfit to prosecute discovery. Sir Walter resolved to make himself master of this settlement, which would gain him the friendship, and secure the obedience of the Indians, who were most cruelly oppressed by the Spaniards.

He accordingly sent captain Calfield to attack the main-guard, with sixty men, and following with forty more, reduced the town of St. Joseph without much trouble. He then set the inhabitants at liberty, and in particular many Indian captives, among whom were five caciques, who were linked together in one chain, and confined in a place where they were almost starved. He kept the go-

Sir Walter Raleigh takes the City of S.t Joseph and sets five Caziques who were chained together at Liberty.

G. Shea. sculp

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

vernor and the Spaniards prisoners, and afterwards burnt the place at the request of the Indians; but in other respects, behaved towards his prisoners, and particularly the governor, with such civility, that he obtained from him a faithful account of all the occurrences that took place in the attempt of the conquest of Guiana.

There now arrived to sir Walter's assistance, captain Giffard, in the Lion's-whelp, and captain Keymis, in a galego, with several gentlemen and soldiers, and some useful supplies. But before he proceeded on his discoveries, he summoned an assembly of the Indian chiefs of the island, and told them by an interpreter, whom he had brought out of England, that he was the servant of a virgin queen, who was the most powerful cacique of the north, and had more caciques under her command than there were trees in that island. That she was an enemy to the Castilians, on account of their tyranny and oppression; and having freed all the coasts of the northern world from their servitude, had sent him to free them also, and to defend the country of Guiana from their future invasions. He then showed them the queen's picture, which they very much admired. By these and similar speeches, both here and on the borders of Guiana, he strongly engaged the natives in his interest.

He now prepared to proceed towards Guiana, though Berreo used many arguments to dissuade him from that enterprise. He told him, that he must venture through many dangerous shallows in small boats, without being able to carry provisions sufficient to last him half the way; that he must not expect the least assistance from the natives of the country; that they had been enjoined by their

chiefs, not to barter gold, nor to hold any communication with the Christians, as the only means to preserve them from destruction: besides, that the way was long, winter was approaching, and the rivers beginning to swell.

Notwithstanding these remonstrances, sir Walter directed his vice-admiral, captain Giffard, and captain Calfield, to steer into the mouth of the river Capuri, and at the highest flood to pass over the shoal; but this they found impracticable, the water falling before they could accomplish it. He then sent the master of the Lion's-whelp, to try another branch called Amana, in order to know if either of the small vessels could enter, but met with no better success. He now caused the carpenter to cut down an old galego boat, and to fit her with banks for oars, so as to draw but five feet water.

In this vessel he embarked with sixty of his people, and was followed by the chaloupe and boat of the Lion's-whelp carrying twenty; captain Calfield's chaloupe carrying ten, and a barge of his own ten more, being in all one hundred men, well armed, with provisions for a month. Their accommodations were extremely bad, being exposed to the weather, and obliged to endure the burning heat of the sun and storms of rain; to lie upon the bare boards; to bear the effluvia of so many people crowded together, and the dressing of their food, which mostly consisted of stale fish; so that no prison could be more loathsome and unhealthy.

At first setting out they had twenty miles of a high sea to cross, in crazed boats, and were driven by the wind to the bottom of the bay of Guanipa, inhabited by a barbarous nation, who used poisoned arrows. From thence they entered one of the rivers,

and, after four days, got above the force of the tide; but they were so bewildered by such a confluence of streams, and whirled about by the different currents and eddies, that, after incessantly toiling for a long time, they were brought back to where they set out from; passing between islands and straits, so overshadowed by trees, that their sight was bounded by the breadth of the river, and the length of the avenue, while the gloominess of the prospect added horror to the loathsomeness of the place.

At length, on the 22d of May, they entered a river, and not knowing any other name for it, called it the Red-cross River: here they put into a creek, which led to a town at a small distance, where their Indian pilot going on shore, was set upon by his countrymen, who hunted him with dogs. In return, sir Walter seized an old man, and threatened to cut off his head, if he did not procure the pilot's liberty; but the pilot escaped, and swam to sir Walter's barge; they, however, kept the old man, whom they treated with the utmost kindness, in hopes of obtaining some useful information; and, indeed, he was of great use in guiding them through the intricacies of the river; though he was often in the utmost perplexity which course to take.

The people, who inhabited the country at the mouth of this great river, were called Tivitivas, and were a bold and hardy race, who knew the value of liberty, and had courage to defend it. During the summer they lived in houses built on the ground; but in the wet, or winter months, dwelt in huts built on trees, which is very common both on this coast and in the East Indies, where the country is subject to be overflowed.

Some time after sir Walter's barge ran aground with such force, that they despaired of getting her off, so that the discovery seemed at an end; however, four days after they again set her afloat, and striking into the Amana, one of the noblest branches of the Oroonoko, the men with incredible fatigue continued their voyage, and being now within 5° of the line, sir Walter endeavoured to keep up their spirits, by directing his pilots to give them hopes, that their labours would soon have an end. At length the old Indian, perceiving that their provisions were exhausted, and that they must perish without an immediate supply, told them, that if they would venture up a river on the right hand, he would bring them to a town where they might be sure of refreshments, and be able to return before night. Sir Walter took him at his word; but he amused them all that day, and the greatest part of the night, without their seeing any town; so that a less prudent commander might have punished him for imposing on them. However, about one o'clock the next morning they reached this long expected town, and obtained the supplies of which they stood in such need. In this hungry and hazardous voyage, which was eighty miles up the river, they observed many fishes of a surprising size, and abundance of alligators; one of which devoured a young Negro that attended sir Walter, who had leaped into the water to refresh himself.

Soon after, being again in want of provisions, they took two canoes laden with excellent bread, belonging to the Indians called Arwaycas, who run them on shore, and took refuge in the woods. Sir Walter pursuing them, in hopes of obtaining some intelligence, found a refiner's basket, which con-

tained quicksilver, saltpetre, and other things used in refining of metals, together with some gold dust that had been refined from the ore.

Sir Walter landing more of his men, offered £500 to any of his soldiers who should take one of the Spaniards; but this they were unable to perform: however, they discovered the Arwaycas concealed in the woods, who had served as pilots to the Spanish adventurers, and who informed him, that they had been accompanied by two other canoes, laden with gold ore, which had escaped. One of these he kept to act as pilot, and from him he learned the manner the Spaniards worked for gold. Having sufficiently refreshed his companions, they appeared quite satisfied, and promised to follow him to the end of the world.

On the fifteenth day from their leaving the ships, they entered the great river Oroonoko, and obtained an account of the nations inhabiting its banks; they then steered by the mountain Aio and a large island, and on the fifth day after their entering the above river, came to an anchor at Morequito, in the province of Aromaia, three hundred miles within land. He here sent a messenger to the king of Aromaia, who the next morning came on foot from his house, and returned the same evening, though he was a hundred and ten years of age, and his journey was twenty-eight miles. This old monarch had a large train of attendants of both sexes, who brought great plenty of flesh, fish, and several sorts of fruit. The king having refreshed himself in a tent, which sir Walter had caused to be pitched for him, they entered, by means of the interpreter, into a discourse on the conduct of the Spaniards. Sir Walter then told him the design of his coming thither, and

expatiated on the virtues of his queen, whose greatest ambition, he observed, was to relieve distressed nations, and humble the pride of the Spaniards, which were her only motives for sending him to Guiana.

The old man listened to him with great attention, and on his asking him many questions, relating to the strength, polity, alliances and government of Guiana, with the readiest way of entering into the heart of the country, the king replied in so clear and sensible a manner, that sir Walter could not help being surprised at finding a person of such judgment and good sense, who had not received the advantages of education. Some of the king's attendants made sir Walter a present of a small but curious kind of parroquito, and an animal then scarcely known, called the armadillo, whose head, body and tail, are covered with hard and beautiful scales; the form of the head is like that of a hog; the feet resemble hands; and the tail is near four inches thick at the root, tapering to the end.

After the king's departure, sir Walter sailed westward to the river Caroli, because it led to the strongest nations on the frontiers, who were enemies to the Epuremei, the subjects of the inca or emperor of Guiana and Manoa. Long before he came to it, he heard the roaring occasioned by the falls of this river; but on entering it, in order to proceed to the Casiagotos, forty miles higher up, he found the stream so rapid, that though the river was as broad as the Thames at Woolwich, he could not advance with his eight-oared barge above a stone's-throw in an hour. He therefore encamped on the banks, and sent an Indian to inform the lords of Canuri, who dwelt in that province, of his arrival. On this message being delivered, one of the princes, named

Wanuretona, attended by a numerous train of followers, came to visit him, bringing great plenty of refreshments: from him he learned, that a nation called the Carolians, were enemies both to the Spaniards and the Epuremei; and that there were mighty nations at the head of that river, who were of the same disposition.

Upon this he dispatched a party of between thirty and forty men, up the side of the river, while he himself, with a few officers, and half a dozen men, armed with musquets, went to take a view of the cataracts in the river Caroli. From the top of the first hills, that commanded a view of the river, they beheld a prodigious cataract, beneath which the water divided into three streams, and ran, with amazing rapidity, upwards of twenty miles; for so far they imagined they were able to behold the prospect. In this view ten or twelve more appeared, each a considerable height above the other, whence the water rushed down with such violence, that the vapours, arising from the rebound, were like the thick smoke hanging over well-inhabited cities; but on their nearer approach, where they could better discern and distinguish the effect, it resembled heavy showers of rain, while the prodigious roaring of the torrents equalled the noise of thunder.

Sir Walter Raleigh observes, that he never saw a more beautiful country, nor more delightful prospects: the valleys were interspersed with hills, and streams of water flowed through them in various branches; the plains, free from brambles, were covered with fine grass; the soil was hard; the deer, crossing every path, enlivened the prospect; and, towards evening, the birds warbling, on every tree, a thousand different notes, all nature appeared ani-

mated: the banks of the rivers were covered with cranes and herons, white, crimson and carnation; the air was refreshed with gentle eastern breezes; and every stone they stooped to take up, seemed to be intermixed with gold. Sir Walter afterwards showing some of these stones to a Spaniard of the Caraccas, was told they were the mother of gold; and, though of little value, were a proof of there being gold mines at no great distance.

There were now many reasons, which rendered a longer delay dangerous. The rains fell so heavy, and the floods poured so suddenly from the hills, that they were sometimes, before night, up to the neck in water, upon the ground over which in the morning they had marched dry-shod. The men had worn their clothes above a month without a change, or being in any other manner refreshed, than by the rains, which frequently washed them ten times a day on their backs. They had no instruments with them to open mines; and, if they advanced further, would be compelled to act against a numerous, civilized and warlike people. These, and many other inconveniences, made them resolve to make the best of their way back to the ships, from which they had now been absent above a month, and had in that space proceeded about 400 miles from the sea coast.

They therefore embarked in their boats, and, in a short time, arrived at Morequito; for gliding down the stream, they went without labour, little less than 100 miles a day. On coming to anchor, Sir Walter was very desirous of having another conference with the old king, who soon arrived with a numerous train, loaded with presents. When the first compliments were passed, Sir Walter led

the king to a tent he had erected, where he enquired of him the best way to the richest parts of Guiana. The old cacique intimated to him, that he ought not to think of penetrating to Manoa, the capital; for neither the season of the year, nor the small number of his men, were proper for the enterprize: that in the plains of Magureguarai, the first civilized town of Guiana, 300 Spaniards had been lately slain; who had invaded it, without having made any friends among those nations, that were ready to join in any attempt against the kingdom of Guiana; and therefore advised sir Walter not to invade the strong parts of Guiana, without obtaining the assistance of those nations who were their enemies. He also informed him, that he believed he might, with his present force, seize the town of Magureguarai, where the gold plates were made, that were dispersed through the neighbouring nations, and which was but four days journey from thence; he also offered to assist him with his subjects. Sir Walter, however, declining the expedition, the king begged him to leave his territories as soon as possible; lest the Epuremei should learn that he had given him any assistance, or the Spaniards should return and insult him: they having once before taken him prisoner, and held him seventeen days in chains, till he paid 100 plates of gold for his ransom. He also said, that if sir Walter would promise to return early the next year, he would engage all the neighbouring nations to assist him against the Epuremei, who had plundered them of their wives; and assured him, that they would gladly renew the war to recover them.

While sir Walter stayed here, he obtained many images and plates of gold, in order to show them

as samples of the wealth of the country; and to prevent the natives from entertaining the idea that he came for gold, he gave them more twenty shilling pieces of the queen's coin than they were worth. He also took with him some of the spar and ore; and, as the highest testimony of his having obtained the confidence of the natives, the old king sent his son to England, where he was baptized with much ceremony, by the name of Gualtero.

On the other hand sir Walter, at their own request, left behind him two of his company, an excellent draftsman, who undertook to describe the country very exactly; and a boy, who waited upon sir Walter, and was to learn the languages of the natives, but who was unfortunately devoured by a wild beast.

After this two caciques offered to conduct him to a gold mine, which they accordingly performed; but the weather being extremely bad, sir Walter resolved to return as expeditiously as possible to his ships. In his passage he was overtaken by a violent storm, and narrowly escaped being lost on the shoals, but happily reached Curiapa, in the island of Trinidad, where his ships lay.

In this tedious and surprising expedition, wherein they were exposed to the severity of the weather, and to the attempts of their enemies, absolutely wanting most of the conveniences, and frequently the necessaries of life, not a single man was lost, except the negro devoured by the alligator; and a considerable quantity of gold ore was obtained, which, proving extremely rich, turned to very good account.

In his return he burned the town of Cumana, because the Spaniards refused to supply him with

provisions, and two other Spanish towns underwent the same fate, after which he returned to England, where he was received with great acclamations of joy.

Notwithstanding the great success of this voyage, and the high probability of easily forming a settlement in this rich country, sir Walter's enemies, jealous of his great abilities, endeavoured, by the most invidious insinuations, to discourage all attempts against Guiana, by the most groundless aspersions of his veracity. These he easily refuted, and immediately fitted out two vessels, under the command of captain Keymis, who sailed in the latter end of January, in order to cherish the friendship that was contracted with the Indians. This gentleman, on his arrival at Morequito, received intelligence of the death of the old king; and that the draftsman, who had been left behind, had been carried into captivity by the Spaniards, who had made a settlement at the mouth of the river Caroli, in the passage to the mines, whence sir Walter had taken ore the preceding year.

Captain Keymis, after having had several conferences with the natives, who were loud in the praises of sir Walter Raleigh, and expressed their inclination to support any measures set on foot by his countrymen, returned to England, and arrived at Portland in the latter end of June, having been only five months in the voyage.

Sir Walter soon after fitted out a handsome pinnace, and having provided her with all necessaries for trade and discovery, she set sail from Weymouth the following December, under the command of captain Leonard Berry. About the beginning of March he entered the river Wiapoco, on the coast

of Guiana; when his provisions growing scarce, and finding no inhabitants, he steered to a town called Armatto, where he was plentifully supplied, and treated with great hospitality by the natives, who freely traded with the English. The captain then invited a neighbouring cacique on board his ship, who accepted the invitation, and was treated in a magnificent manner. The inhabitants of the neighbouring towns, being now convinced that this was an English vessel, flocked to the sea-shore, bringing plenty of provisions and tobacco, and were perfectly satisfied with what was given them in exchange. This gentleman afterwards sailed up several rivers, and having procured all the information in his power, quitted the coast of Guiana, and arrived at Plymouth on the 28th of June, 1597.

CHAP. VII.

Captain Leigh forms a settlement at Guiana; dies; his followers return. His brother sends supplies. A settlement formed in St. Lucia; its destruction. Captain Harcourt's voyage to Guiana.

THOUGH sir Walter was at this time prevented from making any further discoveries of this rich country, by the death of the queen, and his own long imprisonment, yet other attempts were made. In the year 1604, captain Charles Leigh, being assisted by his brother sir Olive, made a voyage to Guiana, at their mutual expence, in a bark of about fifty tons, with forty-six men and boys on board; and on the 22d of May entered the river Wiapoco, in 8° 30′, north latitude, intending to settle at the town of the same name on the coast of Guiana.

The captain was received very kindly by the inhabitants, who consented to allow him a space of ground and some houses, in consideration of which he was to assist them against their inveterate enemies, the Caribbees. This agreement was made by means of two of the natives of Guiana, who had been in England, and could speak some English; and as a pledge for the fulfilment of the promises made by the Indians, five of them, among whom were two considerable persons, were to be sent to England.

The first settlement made by the English, was on a part of the mountain that lies on the west side of the entrance of the river, to which they gave the name of Mount Howard. Captain Leigh might here have lived a quiet life, and have been of great use to his country, had not his men been discontented and mutinous. However, the next year he sent his ship to England, for a fresh supply of necessaries; keeping with him only thirty-five of his men and boys, to settle his small village, and by this means set his colony on a better footing than it had hitherto been. They traded with the natives, both contiguous to the settlement, and further up the river, by which they obtained wax, fine white feathers, tobacco, parrots, monkeys, cotton-yarn and wool, sweet gums, red pepper, with several sorts of wood, roots and berries, used in medicine and for dying: but the flux and other distempers carrying off a considerable number of the company, and at length the captain himself being seized with it, also died. By this unhappy stroke the whole undertaking was ruined, and every one shifting for himself, they returned to England, very much to the regret of the Indians, some of

them in a French ship, and others in two Dutch vessels.

In the mean time, sir Olive Leigh resolving to support his brother in the establishment of his government at Guiana, before he had an account of his success, fitted out another ship, under captain Catalin and captain St. John, to convey him a supply of men and necessaries. This vessel set sail in April, 1605; but by contrary winds and currents, and the unskilfulness of the master, was carried so far to the leeward, that the men despaired of ever recovering their intended port; and therefore put in first at Barbadoes, and afterwards at the island of St. Lucia, designing to return from thence to England: but examining their store of provisions, and finding that it was far from being sufficient to supply so large a company for so long a voyage, captain St. John, with sixty-seven of the passengers, resolved rather to stay and take their chance upon that island, than to run the hazard of being starved at sea.

The English soon made an acquaintance with the Indians, who, in exchange for trifles, furnished them with roots, fruit, and some fowls: and they had every night an opportunity of taking, with very little trouble, the most delicate turtle upon the sands, so that they were in no want of food. For five or six days they lived in huts of their own building, without any thoughts of penetrating into the country; but the captain one day perceiving some pieces of metal upon the arms of some of the Indians, and being informed by a refiner in his company, that they were at least three parts gold, he inquired of the Indians from whence they got them; on which they pointed towards a very high

mountain in the north-west part of the island.

Upon this, captain St. John, with the chief of his men, went in quest of this golden mountain, the rest being appointed to keep guard at home, with the assurance of their returning in a week's time. After their departure those who remained expected that the Indians would bring provisions as usual, but they heard nothing of them for three days together.

The Indians so closely concealed their hatred to the new settlers, that an intimate friendship seemed to subsist; but no sooner was the captain and his men at a sufficient distance from the settlement, than they were surrounded by a large body of the natives; and, the attack came so sudden and unexpected, that every man was slain, before they were able to assume a posture of defence. When this was accomplished, the natives prepared to serve those who remained in the same manner. For this purpose they concealed the fate of the captain and his companions, and appointed one Augramart, a native of the island of St. Vincent, to head them in the enterprise. However, to cover their design, they frequently visited the English, and Augramart having dined with them, persuaded them to accompany him to his quarters, where he promised to furnish them with whatever provisions they wanted.

Upon this invitation, a party of seventeen men set out; but the Indians, intead of conducting them to their quarters, led them into an ambuscade, where they were surrounded by about five hundred of the natives, who discharged their arrows at them on all sides, till the English, after a fruitless defence, were overpowered by numbers, and all slain but one, who made his escape with much difficulty,

and arrived at the settlement just time enough to alarm his companions; for shortly after, the Indians appeared before their houses; but the English discharging some small pieces of ordnance, they quickly retired. In two or three days they returned, to the number of thirteen or fourteen hundred, and after having attacked a small fort and some houses for seven days together, resolved to burn them, by throwing in fire with their arrows, which in a short time reduced them to a heap of ashes. They continued, however, to defend themselves so bravely, that the Indians, finding they could not accomplish the destruction of this handful of men, abandoned the enterprise.

After their departure, some of the neighbouring Indians were prevailed upon, to furnish them with an old boat for some hatchets, knives and beads. This they fitted up as well as they could, and nineteen of them, the miserable remains of sixty-eight, ventured to sea in her, without chart or compass, and with only five gallons of water, a few plantains and potatoes, about twenty biscuits, and a little rice. What was still worse, they had not one mariner among them, and the boat was so overladen, that her gunnel lay almost even with the water.

When they had been ten days at sea, during which four of the men were obliged by turns to continue scooping out the water, when hope began to fail them, they discovered land; but going on shore, found, to their unspeakable disappointment, that it was an uninhabited island, which afforded no manner of sustenance. In this miserable state, they had no other remedy than to send five of their men to the continent to seek relief; these, after many

The Death of General Wolfe the
English Hero at Quebec

Maguire Sc.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

difficulties, reached the main-land, and went to an Indian town called Toyoco, whence, after being fifteen days absent, they brought succour to their miserable companions, who were now reduced to thirteen. By the help of this supply they proceeded to a Spanish town called Coro, where, notwithstanding they were treated with great humanity, two more of them died. Three of them went from thence to Carthagena, and were followed by two more, where they procured a passage to Spain; but what became of the rest is unknown.

Notwithstanding the series of misfortunes that had attended the attempts made for establishing this settlement, Robert Harcourt, Esq. caused a squadron of three vessels, commanded by himself, to be fitted out; the Rose, a ship of eighty tons; the Patience, of thirty-six tons; and the Lily, a chaloupe of nine tons burden, which sailed from Dartmouth on the 29th of March, 1609, and arrived in the bay of Wiapoco on the 17th of May.

It was not long before several canoes filled with Indians came to see who they were, and finding them to be English, came on board without the least fear or ceremony. These people were of the town called Caripo, on the east side of the hill, at the mouth of the Wiapoco river. Their king or chief, who had been many years in England, was then with Mr. Harcourt, and another of his countrymen came passenger with him, though he had not discovered his quality, until the joy of his subjects at the sight of him made him known. Among the Indians who first came on board, was one who spoke English perfectly well, and was known to some of the sailors, having served sir John Gilbert in England many years; and the Indian, who accompanied the king

or chief, having been fourteen years in England, these two were of singular service to the adventurers.

The first ceremonies having passed, Mr. Harcourt informed them, that he was come to settle a colony there, and to take possession of the country for the king of England, by virtue of their grant of it to captain Leigh, and by some of their countrymen to sir Walter Raleigh; assuring them, at the same time, that his majesty intended no unjust usurpation over them; but would only be their friend and protector, and secure them from the insolence of the Caribbees. After some debate, the Indians consented to their living among them; but expressed some diffidence in the performance of their promises, as sir Walter had been so long without accomplishing his.

This affair being concluded, they all went on shore, where they met the best reception the Indians could give them, and were dispersed up and down the town, while the ships rode at anchor in the bay. The great rains, which confined them near a month, being over, the captain endeavoured to discover the golden mountains, which had been the chief inducement to this undertaking; but his guide, who made great promises, failed in their performance, for, when he came to the spot, no gold was to be found; yet the English were fully satisfied that the country afforded gold, as well from the assurances of the natives, who showed them some images, which, upon trial, appeared to contain at least one-third of that metal, as from their observing great quantities of the white spar in which gold is contained. But they had reason to believe that these mines were too far up in the higher parts

of Guiana, and, perhaps, were too strongly guarded, for them to hope that they should be able to reach them; besides, they had neither time nor power to search in a proper manner for them.

This disappointment was near occasioning a mutiny, among those who came with no other view but to amass wealth. But the prudence of the captain prevented its running to such a length; for, to keep them employed, he not only went himself up the river of Wiapoco for the purpose of discovery, but sent his brother with some others, on the same errand, to the river Arrawary, and the country bordering on it, which reaches to the river of the Amazons. He also went and took possession of the mountain Gomoribo, the utmost point of land to the northward in the Wiapoco. He did this, according to the custom of that time, by the ceremony of twig and turf, in the presence both of his own people and the Indians.

The attempt of the captain's brother, in making the discovery of the river Arrawary, was attended with great difficulties and hazards; for the length they ran by sea to this river was near one hundred leagues, through terrible flats and shoals. They went also fifty leagues up the river, with only flat-bottomed canoes, something longer than the common Thames wherries, but not so broad. The Indians they met with in their passage, plainly discovered that they had never seen any Europeans before. It was long before they could be brought to any sort of trade or conversation with them, though they had other Indians in their company; at length the sight of toys induced them to purchase them with provisions. However, the want of these obliged them to return to Wiapoco; nevertheless

they took possession of the country in form, as Mr. Harcourt had done of Gomoribo.

Some time after Mr. Harcourt returned to England, leaving behind him fifty or sixty of his men, over whom he appointed his brother commander in chief, and joined captain Harvey as his assistant. In his way homewards he made several discoveries on the coast, and in some of the rivers; and, after his return to England, obtained, by the favour of prince Henry, a patent for all the coast of Guiana and the river of the Amazons; but shortly after, being involved in some difficulties, he was unable to supply his colony. His brother, however, kept possession of that part of the country he was settled in for three years, during which time he lost but six of his people.

CHAP. VIII.

Sir Walter Raleigh's last voyage to Guiana. Captain Keymis's fruitless search of a gold mine. His engagement with the Spaniards. His death. Sir Walter returns to England, and is beheaded.

SIR Walter Raleigh, after suffering a very long imprisonment in the Tower of London, on the pretence of a plot, for which he had been condemned to die, procured his liberty; and, though he had been twelve years in prison, obtained a commission to execute an expedition to Guiana. In order to accomplish it, he turned the best part of his fortune into money, which he employed in fitting out ships for this voyage, and prevailed on many of his best friends to do so too. Several of these embarked with him, and among them his eldest son. This

fleet consisted of seven sail of different sizes, with which sir Walter left Plymouth harbour, in July 1612, and before he had passed the coast of England, he was joined by as many more, so that the whole fleet consisted of fourteen ships. These he waited for some time, and it had been better if he had left them behind; for they proved a burden to him, and some of them deserted the expedition.

Soon after he received this reinforcement, he encountered a violent storm, which obliged him to put into Cork, from whence he sailed on the 19th of August, and on the 6th of September arrived off the island of Lancerota, when he sent to desire leave of the governor to purchase provisions. This gentleman at first promised him a meeting, then deferred it, and at length refused to have any dealings with sir Walter, under the pretence that the inhabitants were so much afraid of him, that he dared not; and therefore desired him to draw off such of his men as were landed upon the island. But though he complied with this request, they fell upon his men in their retreat, and slew one of them. Of this outrage sir Walter complained to the governor of the Canaries, who, instead of sending him an answer, sallied out upon his men, as they were marching in order to draw water in a desert part of the island; and had not young Raleigh, and some of the officers, defended themselves with the greatest bravery, they had all been slain.

Hence he steered to Gomera, where the Spaniards also resolved to oppose the landing of the English. They lined the beach, and saluted the boats very roughly, but were soon dispersed by the ship guns. After this Sir Walter sent a messenger on shore, to acquaint the governor, that he had no hostile in-

tention; that he only wanted a few necessaries, for which he would pay very honorably; and, that if any of his men should attempt the least fraud or riot, he would hang them in the market-place. The governor then permitted the English to land, and procure the necessaries they wanted; and was so well satisfied with their conduct, that, at their departure, he gave Sir Walter a letter to count Gondamor, the Spanish ambassador at the court of London, wherein he acknowledged sir Walter's polite behaviour, and gave him the character he justly merited. Many civilities passed between sir Walter and the governor's lady, who was of English extraction, being related by the mother's side to the Staffords. This lady sent him sugar, fruits, and other useful presents; for which, in return, he complimented her with a beautiful picture of Mary Magdalen, a ruff finely wrought, and some extracts of amber and rose-water, which were highly valued in the island.

After sir Walter left the Canaries, his ship's companies grew very sickly; and, before he reached the island of Trinidad, he lost many of his men, and was himself dangerously ill. In this weak and low condition, he arrived off Wiapoco, where he hoped to have been assisted by Leonard, an Indian, who had lived with him three or four years in England; but finding that he was removed so far up into the country, that there was no procuring him, he stood away for Caliana, on the coast of Guiana, at the first discovery called Port Howard, where the cacique had been his servant, and had lived with him two years in the Tower of London. There he arrived in a day or two, having passed by an island remarkable for being covered with a

multitude of birds; he then sent to the cacique, his late servant, who speedily came, accompanied by other caciques, and brought great abundance of cassavi bread, plantanes, roasted mullets, pistachios, and pine-apples.

Here he landed his sick men, and pitched tents on shore, by which means both he and his people recovered strength daily, from the benefits they received by the land air, and the refreshments they obtained. He here also set up his barges and chaloupes, which he had brought in frames from England; cleansed his ships, fixed up a forge, made such iron works as were wanted, and took in a fresh supply of water.

Thus the English were employed about three weeks on shore, and in the river. During this time, sir Walter was very much caressed by the natives, with whom he had been formerly acquainted, and by the other natives, who daily furnished him with the best provisions the country afforded, offered him their obedience, and even proposed to make him their sovereign, on condition that he would abide and settle among them; so high was the gratitude they still felt for his former behaviour. These proposals he mentioned in his dispatches, with the greatest modesty and unconcern.

On the 4th of December they left this river, and the next day came to an island, where sir Walter's ship ran on the shoals, and was with difficulty got off.

Sir Walter still continuing ill, it was resolved, that he should stay with five of the ships at Punto de Gallo, in the island of Trinidad, while the rest, commanded by captain Keymis, young Raleigh, sir Walter's son, and a few other gentlemen, with

five or six companies of foot, should proceed up the river Oroonoko, with a month's provisions, in search of the mine; the men being ordered to encamp, till the depth and breadth of the mine was discovered. Sir Walter at the same time desired, that if they found the Spaniards very strong, they would be careful of landing, as a repulse would reflect dishonour on the nation; and he concluded with observing, that if they did not find the mine well worth the pains of working, they need only bring a small quantity of the ore, to convince the king, that it was not a mere fiction of his invention.

With these instructions the five ships set forward on the 10th of December, and soon reached a new Spanish town, called St. Thomas, upon the main channel of the Oroonoko, where Berreo, who was taken by Raleigh in the island of Trinidad, had planted a settlement. This town consisted of about fourteen houses, slightly built, with a chapel, a convent of Franciscans, and a garrison. Keymis and the rest now thought themselves obliged, from fear of leaving an enemy between them and their boats, to deviate from their instructions; by which they had been enjoined, first, to take a small party to make trial of the mine, under shelter of their own camp, and then to deal with the town as they should see cause. It was resolved, to go on shore in one body, between the mine and the town; but unhappily landing by night nearer the town than they suspected, and intending to rest themselves by the river side till morning, they were attacked by the Spanish troops, who had been apprised of their coming. The suddenness of this unexpected charge struck the soldiers with such consternation, that, had they not been animated and encouraged by

their commanders, they would have been all cut to pieces; but rallying, they made such a vigorous defence, that the Spaniards were soon put to flight. In the heat of the pursuit, the English found themselves at the Spanish town, before they were aware of it. Here the battle was renewed, and they were charged by the governor himself, don Diego Palameca, and four or five captains, at the head of their companies, against whom captain Walter Raleigh, a young man of twenty-three years of age, rushed forward at the head of a company of pikemen, without waiting for the musketeers, and having killed one of the Spanish captains, was mortally wounded by another; bnt pressing still on with his sword upon Erinetta, the captain probably who shot him, that Spaniard knocked him down with the butt-end of his musket, upon which this brave youth, crying, 'Lord have mercy upon me, and prosper your enterprise,' expired. At the same instant, young Raleigh's serjeant thrust the Spanish commander through with his halberd. Two other captains were also slain, and the governor himself, fainting under his wounds, was trampled to death; on which his men dispersed; some of whom taking shelter in the houses about the market-place, killed and wounded the English at pleasure, who, finding it difficult to dislodge them, set fire to the houses, and drove them into the woods and mountains, from whence they still continued to alarm them.

Captain Keymis now leaving a garrison in the place, resolved to make an attempt upon the mines, some of which were not far distant; but the Spaniards, who had fled, having taken possession of the passes, Captain Keymis found all approach to them very difficult, particularly with respect to

the mine he had in view; for the river was so low, that, in most places, he could not approach the banks that were near it by a mile; and where he found an ascent, he received a volley of musket-shot from the woods, which killed two of the rowers, and wounded six men, among whom was captain Amherst.

Captain Keymis finding the attempt very hazardous, the passage being full of thick and impassible woods; and thinking that the English, who were left on shore at the Spanish town, would not be able to defend it, especially if the enemy should be reinforced, he gave over the enterprise, and returned to St. Thomas's, where the English plundered the town, and carried away the most valuable part of the treasure: and the enemy not daring to appear, in order to ransom the rest, they set fire to that part which was still unconsumed.

Sir Walter, upon the news of his son's death, and the ill success of this expedition, which had disappointed all his hopes, severely reprimanded Captain Keymis, and exclaimed, that he had undone him; observing, that if he had only brought one hundred weight of the ore, though with the loss of a hundred men, it would not only have satisfied the king, and saved his reputation, but have afforded the nation encouragement to return the next year, and to hold the country for his majesty, to whom it belonged.

Upon this captain Keymis retired in discontent to his cabbin; and soon after, a pistol going off, sir Walter called out to know the occasion, when captain Keymis answered, that it was nothing, but a pistol he had let off, on account of its being long charged: but in about an hour after, his boy found

him lying dead, weltering in blood, with a pistol and long knife lying near him; and, upon examination, it appeared, that he had endeavoured first to shoot himself, but the bullet being small, had only cracked one of his ribs, so that effectually to put an end to his life, he had thrust the knife through his left breast.

Sir Walter now called a council of his officers, who were of opinion, that they ought to retire to Newfoundland, in order to refit and take in refreshments; but many of his men mutinying on the way, he sent them home directly to England.

On his arrival at Newfoundland, great disturbances arose on board his own ship, which being unable to quell, he joined with the stronger party, who, against his own inclination, declared for returning to England.

Sir Walter Raleigh arrived at Plymouth about the end of July, when he found the king had published a proclamation, requiring him and his followers to appear before the privy-council, for having burned the town of St. Thomas. He was soon after arrested, and, on his being brought to London, was committed prisoner to his own house; but endeavouring to escape to a vessel, which waited for him at Gravesend, he was seized near Greenwich, carried to the Tower; and, on the 28th of October, 1618, brought to the court of King's-bench, where the record of his former sentence being examined, he was ordered to the Gate-house, and the next morning beheaded in Old Palace-yard, at the age of sixty-six.

Upon this great occasion he behaved like a brave man and a Christian. He made a nervous and eloquent speech, in justification of his conduct; and

then feeling the edge of the ax, said with a smile, "It is a sharp medicine, but a sound cure for all woes." After which his head was struck off at two blows.

Europe was astonished at the injustice and cruelty of this proceeding; but Gondamor, the Spanish ambassador, thirsted for his blood, on account of his having been the scourge of Spain, during the reign of queen Elizabeth; and king James durst not refuse him the life of a man, who, as a soldier, a scholar, and a statesman, was the greatest ornament of his country. That mean-spirited prince, to his eternal infamy, soon after ordered Cottington to inform the Spanish court, how able a man sir Walter Raleigh was; and yet, to give them content, he had not spared him, though by preserving him he would have given great satisfaction to his subjects, and have had at his command, upon all occasions, as useful a man as served any prince in Christendom.

CHAP. IX.

The voyages of Captains Gosnold, Pringe, Gilbert and Weymouth, to the countries then called Virginia.

IN the year 1602, the Virginia company fitted out a vessel for that country, under the command of captain Bartholomew Gosnold, who sailed from Falmouth on the 26th of March, with only thirty-two persons on board; and, on the 11th of May, arrived among the islands, which form the north side of Massachuset's-bay in New England, where finding no conveniences for forming a settlement, he entered what is now called Plymouth bay; and

afterwards went ashore, on a small but uninhabited isle, which he called Elizabeth's island; and on another, which he named Martha's vineyard. Here some of his company sowed English corn. On Elizabeth's island he erected a fort, for his own security, and for the purposes of traffic with the neighbouring Indians, to whom the Europeans seemed no strangers. For the chief of the first body, that came for the purposes of trade, after the signs of peace being mutually given, made a long speech, and then boldly came on board the ship; but what was most extraordinary, he was dressed in a waistcoat, a hat, breeches, shoes and stockings, but his attendants had only deer-skins about their shoulders, and seal-skins about their waists. Their hair was very long, and tied up with a knot behind, and, though they were painted all over, the natural swarthiness of their complexion was visible.

On the north-west side of Elizabeth's island, they found a lake of fresh water, about a league in circumference, very near the sea; and in the middle of it was a small island, which contained about an acre; and this they chose as the most commodious place for building the fort. In this lake they found a great number of turtle, with several sorts of fish and fowl, which gave those who proposed to settle there, the agreeable prospect of being in no want of provisions. On their visiting the continent in its vicinity, they found the country extremely delightful, and abounding in meadows, brooks and rivers. They had also some communication with the Indians of the main land; for they traded with them for European commodities, exchanging for knives and toys, beavers, martins, otters, foxes and rabbits, together with seal and deer-skins.

The affairs of the plantation might have gone on very prosperously, had all the planters been unanimous; but they were solely intent upon their private interests, and upon making a profitable voyage. The captain, having in vain endeavoured to persuade some of them to stay in the fort, took in a large cargo of sassafras, cedar, furs, &c. and, leaving the island on the 18th of June, arrived at Plymouth on the 23d of July following.

At the time of queen Elizabeth's decease, a design was on foot for prosecuting the discoveries and trade to North America, in which several of the gentlemen and merchants of Bristol were engaged. Of these the Rev. Mr. Hackluit, prebendary of the cathedral of that city, was chosen to apply, in the name of the rest, to sir Walter Raleigh, who was considered the proprietor of Virginia, in order to obtain his licence. This sir Walter immediately granted, and also relinquished all share in the profits that should arise from the voyage.

Being thus empowered, they raised a joint stock of £1000, and fitted out two small vessels, the Speedwell of 50 tons, commanded by Matthew Pringe, with thirty men and boys, and the Discoverer, a bark of 26 tons, commanded by Mr. William Brown, who had under him a mate and eleven men and boys. They were victualled for eight months, and had a large cargo on board of the goods thought most proper for that country.

These vessels sailed from Bristol on the 20th of March, 1603, but were obliged by contrary winds, to put into Milford-haven, where they continued till the 20th of April following, when they proceeded on their voyage, and, without any remarkable accident, arrived on the coast of North Ame-

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

Indians dancing round an English Boy playing on a guitar

G. Shea. sculp.

Dublin. Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane.

rica, in the latitude of 43 degrees; whence they sailed south-west, in search of the part which had been visited by captain Gosnold.

They at length found, in the latitude of 41 degrees and some few minutes, a very convenient bay, to which they gave the name of Whitson's-bay, in honor of Mr. John Whitson, who was then mayor of Bristol. Here they landed, and cut sassafras, which they carried on board; but to prevent their being surprised in the woods by the natives, while they were at work, they erected a small fort or redoubt, in which they lodged their effects, under a guard of four or five men.

Forty or fifty, and sometimes a hundred of the Indians, frequently came in a company to trade with the English, with whom they eat and drank, and were very merry; and, on observing an English lad playing upon a guitar, they got round about him, and taking hold of each other's hands, danced after the American manner. The seamen, observing that the natives were much afraid of two mastiffs they had with them, when they wanted to get rid of their company, had the brutality to let loose one of the mastiffs, at which the natives ran shrieking into the woods. This ill treatment, and the erecting a fortification in the country, probably made the Indians look upon the English as their enemies: for soon after a party of them surrounded the fort, when most of the English were absent, and would probably have taken it, only that the workmen in the woods, alarmed by the firing of two guns, hastened to its relief.

The Indians indeed pretended that they had no hostile intentions, but the English did not care to trust them afterwards; and, the day before they

embarked, a numerous body of the natives set fire to the woods, in which the sassafras was cut, that the English might understand they would preserve nothing that could invite such guests to visit them again.

About the middle of June they had completed the freight of the bark, and, having sent her to England, made all the dispatch they could in loading their own vessel with a valuable cargo of skins and furs, which they had procured from the Indians in exchange for the commodities they had brought with them.

These Indians much resembled those mentioned by captain Gosnold; and, among the other curiosities the English found in the country, they took one of the boats used by the inhabitants, that was made of the bark of a birch-tree, sewed together with twigs, the seams of which were covered with rosin or turpentine; and though this boat was 17 feet long, four broad, and capable of carrying nine persons, it did not weigh 60 pounds. Those boats were rowed with oars resembling our baker's peels, by the help of which they went at a great rate.

Captain Pringe having quitted the coast of Virginia on the 9th of August, sailed to England, and on the 2d of October entered King's Road, where he had the satisfaction to find that the bark had arrived safe a fortnight before.

In the same year another attempt was made, on the same account, by captain Bartholomew Gilbert, who had been the year before at Virginia with captain Gosnold. This gentleman sailed from Plymouth on the 10th of May, in the Elizabeth, a bark of fifty tons burden, and in his passage touched at St. Lucia, Dominica and Nevis, where he traded, and,

at the last of these places cut about twenty tons of lignum vitæ.

On the 3d of July he sailed for Chesapeake-bay, on the coast of Virginia, where he was very desirous of obtaining some intelligence of the manners and disposition of the people, and on the 25th arrived near the mouth of that harbour; but the wind blew so hard, and the sea running high, he could not enter it; therefore, after beating about two or three days, was obliged to steer more to the eastward.

On the 29th, being near the shore, the captain, with four of his best men, landed in the boat, and being well armed, proceeded some way up the country; but in their march being attacked and overpowered by the inhabitants, were killed; and it was with difficulty that the boat, with two young men who were left in her, returned to the ship with this melancholy news.

There being now but eleven men and boys in the ship, they were afraid to venture the loss of any more of their small company; and their provisions growing short, Henry Shute, the master, who had taken the command, resolved, though they were in extreme want of wood and water, to return to England, and arrived safe in the river Thames about the end of September.

The business of settling and planting the northern continent of America being now laid open, by the attainder of sir Walter Raleigh, on the ridiculous pretence of a very improbable plot; and those who had been concerned in the last voyages, not only giving a favourable account of the country, but obtaining considerable profits, several persons of distinction were determined to promote these discoveries; in particular, Henry Wriothesly, Earl

of Southampton, and Thomas Lord Arundel of Wardour, resolved to fit out a ship for that expedition. This vessel, which was called the Archangel, and commanded by captain George Weymouth, sailed from Dartmouth on the 31st of March, 1605, and met with nothing of consequence until they imagined they were near the coast of Virginia, when the wind carrying them to the northward, to the latitude of 41° 36′, and their wood and water beginning to grow short, they became very desirous of seeing land, which their charts gave them reason to expect being very near, but found none after a run of almost fifty leagues. At length they discovered an island, that was very woody along the shore. It abounded in fruit, and several kinds of fowl; the sea afforded plenty of fish, while streams of fresh water ran down the cliffs.

This was the eastern part of what is now called Long-Island; from thence they could discern a great many other islands, and the main land stretching from the west-south-west to the east-north-east; they visited several of the islands near the continent, and found them very full of timber, and fruit-trees of various sorts.

Among these islands they met with a harbour, in which ships of any burden might lie defended from all winds, in from six to ten fathom water; and this they called Pentecost Harbour, from its being discovered about Whitsuntide. The fir-trees, which grew in great numbers on these islands, yielded excellent turpentine; and many of the shells they found about the rocks, afforded small pearls.

While they lay here, the natives from the continent came to trade with them for skins and furs, in exchange for knives, beads, and such trifles;

very readily giving the value of ten or twelve pounds in their goods, for such English hard-ware as was not worth above five shillings.

Their bows, arrows and canoes, were like those of the other Indians upon the coast. The heads of their tobacco-pipes were sometimes made of clay, and sometimes were only the claw of a lobster; but they were all sufficient to hold as much as ten or twelve of ours.

After they had remained here about six weeks, and during all that time carried on a very profitable trade with the natives, they thought of returning to England; for which they set sail on the 16th of June, and arrived that day month in sight of the land's-end.

CHAP. X.

Settlement of Virginia. Description of the climate, soil, beasts, birds, fishes, trees, plants, corn, and the manner of cultivating tobacco.

THE above prosperous voyage inducing many persons of rank and fortune to wish this trade thoroughly established, they applied to the crown for such legal authorities as were necessary, and two companies were formed for settling this large tract of land, which was at that time divided into North and South Virginia. One of these companies consisted of adventurers from the city of London, who were desirous of fixing a plantation between 34 and 41° of north latitude; and the other, of those of the cities of Bristol, Exeter, and the town of Plymouth, who wanted to settle in between 33 and 45°. Each of these companies obtained

letters-patent, by which it was provided, that they should not plant within one hundred miles of each other. That they should possess one hundred miles of the country, to the westward; fifty miles either way along the coast, from the seat of their first settlement, and all the islands opposite to the coast, for the space of one hundred miles at sea. They were empowered to dig mines in and beyond their respective limits, to the westward, paying the crown a fifth of all the gold and copper ore they should obtain; they were likewise empowered to seize all the ships that should trade within their respective limits; and even to coin money, and raise forces for their defence.

These two companies no sooner received this extensive authority from the crown, than they began to provide for making settlements within the bounds of their respective grants. Under this view, the London company fitted out three vessels, one of 100 tons, another of forty, and a pinnace of 20; on board of which were 110 landsmen, and every thing necessary for settling a colony. The command of this small squadron was given to captain Christopher Newport; but the orders relating to the government of the colony, and the names of the council, who were to be entrusted with the administration of it when settled, were delivered to them sealed up, and which were not to be opened until they were on shore.

This squadron sailed from London on the 20th of December, 1606, took in water and other necessaries at the Canaries, and proceeded to the Caribbee islands, where they arrived on the 23d of February, and staid, chiefly at Nevis, for five weeks. On the 3d of April they sailed for Virginia, and

on the 26th of the same month, landed at the southern cape of Chesapeake Bay, where they built a fort, which they called Cape and Fort Henry; and to the northern cape gave the name of Charles, in honour of the two princes; but the river Powhatan they called James's river, in honour of the king.

This river they completely searched, before they came to any resolution about the formation of a settlement; and then, by unanimous consent, they chose a peninsula, about fifty miles up the river, which, besides the goodness of the soil, was esteemed most capable of being made a place of trade and security; two-thirds of it being surrounded by the main river, which all along affords good anchorage, and the other third by a small river, able to receive vessels of 100 tons burden, till it comes within 30 yards of the great river, where it generally overflows in spring tides; on which account this peninsula obtained the name of an island, and both the town and the river received their name from king James. The whole island, thus inclosed, contains about 2000 acres. The narrow passage rendered this place very secure from the attack of an enemy; and, to add to its strength, they erected fortifications. This was the first English plantation that succeeded.

The first business the colony entered upon, after their landing, was to open their orders, when they found that seven gentlemen were appointed their council, one of whom was captain Smith, on whose skill and experience the company seemed chiefly to rely; but the other gentlemen had such a dislike to him, that they put him in confinement soon after their departure from England, and now excluded him from the council; but afterwards the planters, when they had by their dissensions almost

ruined the company's affairs, were obliged not only to admit him into the council, but in a great degree to resign the administration into his hands.

The ships having staid five or six weeks before the intended new town, captain Newport departed with them for England, leaving upwards of 100 men settled in the above form of government: but the ships were no sooner gone, than the same feuds and disorders broke out with increased violence. In the midst of these feuds they began to plant, sow, build and fortify. They also carried on a very advantageous trade with the natives; of which they might have made much greater profit, and have managed it more to the satisfaction of the Indians, if they had been under any rule, and not at liberty to outbid one another. Thus they not only lessened their own profit, but created jealousies and disturbances among the Indians, which seems to have been the principal cause of most of the vexations the planters received from the natives.

But now an object drew their minds not only from trade, but from taking the care necessary for their preservation. They found in the isthmus of the peninsula on which James's-town was built, a spring of water, that washed down with it a yellow sort of dust, which lay shining at the bottom, and filled their minds with an insatiable desire of riches; for, taking this to be gold, they were so stupid as to neglect both the necessary defence of their lives from the attacks of the Indians, and the support of their bodies, by procuring provisions, absolutely relying upon the power of gold; thinking that where this was in abundance, nothing else could be wanting; and, thus infatuated with the hopes of obtaining immense wealth, in comparison of their own

inestimable stream, they despised the mines of Peru and Mexico. However, in some measure, they soon grew sensible of their error; for, by their negligence, they were reduced to great want of provisions, and the little they had was lost by the burning of their town, while all hands were employed about this imaginary treasure; so that they were obliged to live on fruit, crabs and muscles, without having a day's provision beforehand. By this neglect, many of them became a prey to the Indians; while the rest, not daring to venture abroad, were forced to be contented with what they could get.

They were in this miserable condition, when a vessel arrived with supplies for the plantation. The settlers, who neither thought nor spoke of any thing but gold, put on board this ship all the yellow sand they had gathered, with the skins and furs for which they had bartered with the natives, and then sent her away. Soon after another vessel, that brought additional supplies, was stowed with this imaginary gold-dust, and her lading completed with cedar and clap-board.

At length, being persuaded that they might apply themselves to other labours, more necessary than collecting yellow sand, which, however valuable, would be always in their power, if they fortified themselves effectually, they eagerly set about it. By the good management of captain Smith, they made several discoveries in James's-river and Chesapeake-bay; and, in the year 1608, they first gathered Indian corn of their own planting. But unhappily captain Smith, going to make discoveries up the country, was attacked by 300 of the natives, under the command of one of their chiefs, who slew all his men, and taking him prisoner,

carried him to Powhatan, their principal chief, who would have put him to death, had it not been for the intercession of his daughter Pacahunta. Captain Smith being afterwards released, returned to James's-town, when the president of the council resigning his office, he was unanimously desired to accept it.

While captain Smith was employed in making the above discoveries, affairs ran again into confusion in James's-town; and several uneasy people, taking advantage of his absence, attempted to desert the settlement, and to run away with a small vessel that was left to attend it; for captain Smith was the only man amongst them who could manage discoveries with success, or keep the people in any order; they, however, now made two other settlements, one at Nansamona, in James's-river, above thirty miles below James's-town, and the other at Powhatan, six miles below the falls of the river, which last was bought for a certain quantity of copper; each settlement consisted of 120 men; and soon after they made a fourth settlement near the mouth of James's-river.

Two-thirds of the adventurers coming over with a view of having every thing provided to their hands, were subsisted by the labour of the industrious few, till captain Smith compelled them all to take a share in the work, which being done, a quantity of ground was soon planted sufficient to subsist the colony; when by moderate exercise and good food, they were not only restored to health, but became in a very flourishing condition; and being now no longer under the necessity of procuring food from the Indians by violence, they lived and traded together very amicably, and Powhatan

suffered them to make several other settlements in the country.

But when their affairs were in this prosperous situation, the arrival of six or seven ships from England, with a large supply of ammunition and provisions, and between three and four hundred planters, threw the whole colony into confusion; which, being made known to the company in England, they obtained a new patent from king James, that empowered them to appoint a governor, and they prevailed on lord Delawar to accept of this office. That nobleman, therefore, appointed sir Thomas Gates, sir George Summers, and captain Newport, his deputies, until his arrival; and these gentlemen sailed from England, with nine ships and 500 men, in May, 1609. Having embarked in one ship, they were cast away on the Bermuda islands, then uninhabited; but they and all the crew escaped on shore, where they found plenty of provisions, and took possession of those islands for the crown of England: they have since been called the Summer Islands, from sir George Summers.

In the mean time, the rest of the fleet arrived safe in Chesapeake-bay, where captain Smith still retained the title of president; but both the old and new settlers declared, that they were not obliged to obey him, as another commission had been granted, which superseded his. Captain Smith, however, kept them in some order, while he remained among them: but having the misfortune to be accidentally wounded by the explosion of some gunpowder, it was found absolutely necessary for him to return to England. He had no sooner embarked, than every thing fell into the utmost confusion; all business was neglected, and the settlers, living profusely on

what was contained in the magazines, were quickly reduced to want; which, no sooner happened, than they rambled without order through the country, plundering the natives of their provisions, who, attacking them in their own defence, cut off great numbers.

They were thus situated, when the deputy-governors arrived; and those gentlemen had the mortification to see, that the vices of these men, together with sickness and famine, had reduced them from upwards of four hundred to less than eighty. Sir Thomas Gates and sir George Summers endeavoured all in their power to reduce them to order, but in vain; for the settlers, showing their empty warehouses, their ruined settlements, and the number of their sick, obliged them to consent to their embarking for England, as the only means of saving those that were left.

As they were sailing out of Chesapeake-bay, their new governor, lord Delawar, arrived, who obliged them to return to James's-town, in order to repair their houses and forts; and they had no sooner returned on shore, than his lordship, in a free and plain discourse, set before them the folly and madness of their proceedings; reproved them for their divisions, idleness and ill conduct, which had occasioned their misfortunes; advised them to reform, or he should be compelled to draw the sword of justice; declaring, however, that he had much rather draw his own sword in their defence; telling them, for their encouragement, he had brought them such plenty of provisions, that there would be no danger of want for the future, if they were not wanting to themselves. He then proceeded to constitute a council, and afterwards to furnish the

people with meat; for, though there were no less than five or six hundred hogs in the plantation, when captain Smith went to England, at this time there was not one left alive; for they had been either eaten by the colony, or destroyed by the Indians, who had likewise driven all the deer and other game out of the country; and the English were so ill provided with nets, that though there was plenty of fish in the rivers, they knew not how to take them.

The company had sent over a supply of clothing, biscuit, flour, beer and other liquors; but taking it for granted, that there were hogs, venison, fowl and fish enough in the country, had sent no cattle. Sir George Summers, therefore, was dispatched to Bermuda, to bring over live hogs; for he had found plenty of them in that island, when he was cast away upon it. The governor also employed some in fishing, but the nets and tackle being bad, they had no success; he endeavoured to settle a correspondence with Powhatan, and other Indian chiefs, in order to exchange English goods for cattle; in some of these negociations he succeeded, particularly with the king of Patomack, one of the most powerful of the Indian chiefs. But though Powhatan had already promised to acknowledge the king of England as his sovereign, and had, on that account, received presents of considerable value, he was so exasperated at the English, that he returned no other answer, than desiring them to depart the country, or confine themselves within the limits of James's-town island, and not continue ranging through his dominions, with a view, as he supposed, of subduing them; threatening to give orders for their being cut off, if ever they went

beyond these limits. He also commanded the messengers, sent by his lordship, not to see his face again, unless they brought him a coach and six horses; for he had been informed by some Indians, who had been in England, that all persons of distinction rode in those vehicles.

Lord Delawar, exasperated at this answer, caused the right hand of an Indian to be cut off, and in this condition sent him to Powhatan; with orders to tell him, that he would send him all his subjects in that manner, and burn all the corn in the country, which was then ripe, if he did not in future forbear all acts of hostility. This instance of barbarity had the desired effect, and the colony lived for some time undisturbed, making fresh discoveries, and forming new alliances with the natives.

Meanwhile sir Thomas Gates was sent to England, with an account of the state of the colony; when the ships being freighted home with cedar, black walnut, and iron ore, these returns appeared so inconsiderable, that the company were in some suspence, whether they should not send for lord Delawar and the colony home; but sir Thomas Gates told them, that if they would send over men, who knew how to make pitch and tar, and plant flax and hemp, they might furnish England with all kinds of naval stores. That as the country abounded in mulberry-trees, they might easily set up a manufactory of silk; that the soil was exceedingly fertile, producing corn, grass, grapes, and a variety of other fruits; that European cattle and corn multiplied prodigiously, and that the colony would never want fish or fowl, was it provided with boats, nets and engines, which would enable the English to support themselves.

This representation made the patentees resolve to proceed with alacrity in improving this plantation; in which resolution they were strengthened by lord Delawar, who, having left the honourable Mr. Percy as his deputy, returned to England for the recovery of his health.

While this nobleman was in England, his deputy brought about a peaceable correspondence with the natives, which at last advanced so far, that several intermarriages took place; and among these the Indian princess Pacahunta, who had saved captain Smith's life, espoused Mr. John Rolf, an English gentleman, whose posterity still enjoy the lands descended to them from this lady.

The situation of Virginia is remarkably happy and convenient, having the river Potowmac, which separates it from Maryland, on the north-east; the Atlantic Ocean on the east; the province of Carolina on the south; and the Apalachian mountains, which separate it from Florida, on the west. It is between 36 and 39° north latitude, and between 74 and 80° west longitude; extending about 240 miles in length, from north to south, and about 120 miles in breadth, from east to west. The winter is dry and clear, and though the snow falls in great quantities, it seldom lies above a day or two; the frosts, indeed, are quick and sharp, but they seldom continue long. Their spring is somewhat earlier than ours. In April they have frequent rains: May and June are very pleasant months, the heat being greatly tempered with cooling breezes; but July and August are sultry; the air growing in a manner stagnant, which produces dreadful thunder and lightning; and in September prodigious showers of rain fall, at which time the inhabitants

are most sickly. It ought, however, to be observed, that the climate daily improves, and the thunder-storms less violent, which is ascribed to the clearing of the country, and cutting down the woods, as this gives a free circulation to the air.

The soil is generally low towards the sea-coast; and for a hundred miles up the country there is hardly a hill or a stone to be met with, except some rocks of iron ore, which appear above ground, and some banks of a kind of petrified oyster-shell, that are of a prodigious thickness. However, at the waterfalls, there are stones of different kinds, fit for paving and other uses; and towards the hills there are quarries of slate and free-stone. There is also a sort of shining pebbles, not at all inferior to Kerry-stones; though they are, generally speaking, soft, yet, if long exposed to the air, they become very hard, and, if polished, are extremely beautiful.

The bay of Chesapeake runs directly up the country, almost due north, for three hundred miles. At the entrance it is about twenty miles broad, or something more, and it continues navigable beyond the coast of Virginia. Into the west side of this bay four great rivers fall, which rise in the Allegany mountains, all of them running from the north-west to the south-east. The most southerly of these is James's-river, which is generally about two miles over, and navigable at least eighty miles. A little to the northward is York-river; and in some places these two rivers approach each other so near, that they are not five miles asunder. Farther to the northward is the river Rapohanack, which, in some places, is not ten miles distant from York-river; and each of them is as broad or broader

than James's-river. North of Rapohanack is the great river Potowmac, which, in some places, is about seven miles distant from Rapohanack-river, and, in others, upwards of fifty. It is navigable above two hundred miles, and, in some places, is nine miles broad, but in general does not exceed seven. Though the mouth of this last river, and that of James's-river, are about one hundred miles asunder, the heads of all the four rivers rise in the same hills, pretty near each other.

There were neither horses, cows, sheep nor hogs, in this country, before the coming of the English, but they have now abundance of them all. They have also a sort of elks, but they are not common, and plenty of deer. They have likewise hares, squirrels of several kinds, musk-rats, racoons, wild-cats, beavers, foxes, and a sort of dogs like wolves: as for reptiles, they have lizards, and several kinds of snakes. They have likewise many insects, as musketoes, bugs, seed-ticks, &c.

They have eagles of three or four sorts: the first is the grey eagle, of about the size of a kite; the second, the bald eagle, so called because the upper part of the head and neck is covered only with a kind of white down; the third is the black eagle, which resembles those in Great Britain. These are very ravenous, and do a great deal of mischief. They have most sorts of hawks, and two kinds of owls, both of which are very large. The white owl is very beautiful, all the feathers on the back and breast being as bright as silver, except a black spot immediately below the throat. They have wild-turkeys, so large that some of them weigh forty pounds. Their partridges are smaller than ours, but are as well-tasted. They have also the

mocking-bird, which is of two sorts, the grey and the red. This is esteemed the finest singing-bird in the world: and it receives its name from its readily imitating the notes of all the birds it hears. They have likewise the humming-bird, which is very small, has a long bill, and very fine feathers. They have all sorts of water-fowl, and wild swans, geese, ducks, teal, wigeons, gulls, cormorants, herons, bitterns and curlews; but they all differ in some respects from ours.

As for fish, no country has greater plenty; for, in February, March, April and May, shoals of herrings much larger than ours, come up into the rivers; there is also plenty of cod and stingrass, which last is said to be peculiar to this country; it is so called from its having a sting in its tail, and is esteemed good food. In their rivers they have sturgeon, trout and green-fish, in great plenty; and also flounders, whitings, carp, pike, mullets and perch. The old-wife, and the sheep's-head, are excellent. Their shell-fish are oysters, crabs, cockles and shrimps.

In these seas are whales, dog-fish, sharks, porpoises, gar-fish and sword-fish. They have also another species called the toad-fish, from its swelling monstrously when taken out of the water; and the rock-fish, some species of which are poisonous. The skip-jack, so called from its skipping out of the water, is tolerable good food; as is also the tobacco-pipe fish, which has its name from being long and slender.

Few countries are better stocked with trees, or afford a greater variety. They have large oaks, cedars, firs, cypress, elm, ash and walnut; also beech, poplar, hazle, &c.; besides sassafras, sarsa-

parilla, and many other sweet-woods, and such as are used in dying. There are grapes of several kinds, various sorts of cherries, and plumbs, from the size of a damson to that of a pear; peaches and quinces in abundance, and great plenty of apples and pears.

They have all sorts of English grain, which thrive well; and also maize, or Indian corn, which grows in a great ear, as large as the handle of a horsewhip, having from three hundred to seven hundred grains in one ear, and sometimes a grain produces two or three such ears. It is of various colours, white, yellow, red, blue, green and black, and some speckled and striped, but the white and yellow are most common. The stalk is as thick as an ordinary walking-cane, and grows six or eight feet high, in which is a juice whereof a syrup is sometimes made, and from every joint of the stalk there grow long leaves resembling that of sedge. This corn is planted in holes or trenches, about five or six feet distant from each other, the earth is opened four inches deep with a plow, and four or five grains thrown into each hole or trench, at the distance of a span from each other, and then covered with earth. They weed the corn from time to time, and as the stalks grow high, they raise the mould about them in the same manner as the hillocks in a hop-garden. They begin to plant in April, but the chief planting is in May, which they continue until the middle of June: what is planted in April is reaped in August; that planted in May is reaped in September, and the last in October.

As the great produce of this country is tobacco, and as that of Virginia is considered as the best in

the world, we shall give a particular account of it. It is certain that the country produced vast quantities of this vegetable, before any Europeans went thither, and that the use of it was taught them by the natives; but the manner in which they cultivated it, is now no longer known, since they buy what they consume from the English, and therefore we shall here give their manner of managing this plant.

The tobacco-seeds are first sown in beds, where having remained a month, the plants are in the first rainy weather transplanted, and the earth raised into little hillocks about them; being grown near a foot high, they, within the space of another month, top them, and prune off all the bottom leaves, leaving only seven or eight on a stalk, that they may be the better fed, after which, these leaves in six weeks time come to their full growth. The planters prune off the suckers, and clear them of the horn-worm twice a week, which is called worming and suckering. This lasts three weeks or a month, by which time, the leaf, from being green, begins to turn brownish, and to spot and thicken, which is a sign of its ripening. They then cut the plants down as fast as they ripen, heap them up, and let them lie a night to sweat. The next day they carry them to the tobacco-houses, where every plant is hung up at a convenient distance from each other, for about a month or five weeks; they take them down in moist weather, when the leaf gives, or else it will crumble to dust; they are then laid upon sticks, and covered up close in the tobacco-house, for a week or a fortnight, to sweat; and then opening the bulk in a wet day, they strip and sort them, putting the best leaves at the top, and

the worst at the bottom. The last work is to pack it in hogsheads, or to bundle it up, which is also done in a wet season; for in curing of tobacco, wet seasons are as necessary as dry, to make the leaf pliant.

Besides tobacco, this country also produces flax, hemp and cotton, and all kinds of naval stores might be produced in Virginia, with great ease, and in vast plenty.

CHAP. XI.

The first attempts of the Plymouth, or North-Virginia company. The manner in which New England was settled. Its situation and climate; animals, fowls, fish, and produce. A description of Boston, the capital.

IN the last chapter having given a history of the settlements made by the London, or South-Virginia company, we shall now give an account of the proceedings of the Western, or Plymouth company, as they are stiled by the writers of that age. They were for some years contented with trading with the natives of North Virginia for furs, and with fishing upon that coast; but at length two ships being employed in this fishery in the year 1614, commanded by captain John Smith, and captain Thomas Hunt, the former went on shore, took a particular view of the country of the Massachusets, and had some skirmishes with the natives. After which, he ordered Hunt to dispose of his fish in Spain, and then return to England; but Hunt, basely proposing to make a market of the natives, treacherously enticed twenty-seven of the Indians on board his ship, and then setting sail

to Malaga, sold them to the Spaniards for slaves, at the rate of twenty pounds a man, keeping only an Indian called Squanto, who was afterwards of great service to the English.

This outrage was so resented by the Indians, that, for the present, all commerce between them became impracticable; and though captain Dormer was sent to New England, in the year 1619, with Squanto for his interpreter, in order to conclude a peace with the natives, and to settle a colony near Massachusets-bay, the Indians refused to be reconciled, and, attacking the English, captain Dormer was wounded, upon which he left Squanto on shore, and proceeded to Virginia.

The patentees were so affected by these discouragements, as to give up all thoughts of making a settlement. However, other adventurers carried on a trade to New England, that turned to very good account; and it is probable, that this commerce might have been carried on for several years in the same manner, without any thoughts of planting, had it not been for a congregation of Brownists, or Independents, who, being persecuted in England, had retired to Holland, and formed themselves into a church, under Mr. John Robinson, their minister, and soon after formed the design of seeking an establishment in the New World. In order to effect this, they, by means of sir Robert Nanton, obtained the consent of king James I. for settling in America; and afterwards, by means of their agents in England, contracted with some merchants for a settlement on the banks of Hudson's-river.

These merchants were proprietors of the country, and agreed to the contract, which bore hard upon those who were to be the first settlers. Mr.

Robinson's congregation, however, sold their estates, and made a common bank for a fund to carry on this undertaking. They then hired a ship of one hundred and eighty tons, which they freighted with proper goods and merchandize, and the whole company, consisting of about one hundred and twenty persons, coming to England, embarked on board this vessel at Southampton.

This ship sailed from Plymouth on the 6th of September, 1621, and fell in with Cape Cod on the 9th of November, a very improper time of the year for beginning to build and plant. Here they refreshed themselves for about half a day, and then tacked about to the southward for Hudson's River; but Jones, the master of the ship, having been bribed by the Dutch, who intended to take possession of these parts themselves, as they did some time after, instead of putting out to sea, entangled them among dangerous shoals and breakers, where, meeting with a storm, the ship was driven back again to the Cape, on which they put into the harbour, and resolved to attempt a settlement there; but Cape Cod not being within the limits of the land for which they had obtained a grant, they associated themselves into a body politic, by a formal instrument, wherein, having declared themselves the subjects of the crown of England, they solemnly engaged to submit to the laws that should, from time to time, be made for the good of the country.

Having chosen a very commodious spot for building a town, surrounded by an agreeable country, they resolved not to trouble their friends about obtaining any farther licence, but to risk their fortunes where Providence had cast them; in consequence of this resolution they went hard to work in

building a town, in 42 degrees north latitude, which they named Plymouth. The planters, who agreed to stay in this place, were about one hundred, including women and children, and of these there were only nineteen families; but such were the fatigues endured by this infant colony during the first winter, that fifty persons out of the hundred died in the space of two months; and, had the Indians attacked them, they had probably all perished.

However, they saw none of the natives until the middle of March, when Samoset, one of their sagamores or captains, came and told them, that his people would be glad to trade with them. The next day returning with more of the natives, he informed them, that Massassoiet, their great sachem, had his residence three days march to the northward, and intended them a visit. Massassoiet accordingly arrived on the 22d of March, with a retinue of sixty persons, and being received by captain Standish, at the head of a file of musketeers, was conducted to a kind of throne, prepared in one of the houses. He was of a large stature, middle-aged, had a grave countenance, and reserved in speech. His face was painted red, and both his head and face were smeared over with oil. He had a deer-skin mantle; his breeches and stockings, which were of one piece, were of the same materials, and his arms were covered with the skins of wild cats. His knife hung by a string at his breast, and his tobacco-pouch behind. His principal attendants were dressed in the same manner; and there appeared no other mark of distinction between this prince and his subjects, than a chain of fish-bones, which Massassoiet wore about his neck. This chief had not been long seated, when Mr. Carver, the

Massasoiet, the Great Sachem entertaind by Capt.n Standish

G. Shea, sc.

Dublin, Published by J. Christie, 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

governor, came in with a guard of musketeers, whereon Massassoiet rose up and kissed him, after which they both sat down, and an entertainment was provided by the English; of which no part appeared more acceptable than the brandy, the sachem himself drinking very plentifully of it.

In Massassoiet's retinue was Squanto, who had been in England with Hunt. This Indian had a very great affection for the English, among whom he had lived several years, and, from his favourable representation of the colony, the sachem was induced to make them this friendly visit. At this meeting he entered into an offensive and defensive alliance with the English, acknowledged king James for his sovereign, and, as an evidence of his sincerity, granted part of his country to the planters and their heirs for ever: for the sachem, being informed by Squanto of the great power of the English, both by sea and land, promised himself their assistance against his enemies, the Naranganset Indians; while the English stood in no less need of his friendship, to establish themselves in the country. This alliance, therefore, being founded on the mutual interests of the contracting parties, was inviolably maintained for many years.

The treaty being concluded, Massassoiet returned to his capital, leaving Squanto with the colony, who was extremely serviceable to them, not only as an interpreter, but by instructing them how to plant and manage their Indian corn, in piloting them along the coast, and supplying them with fish, fowl and venison. The English, however, still remained sickly, and several of them died, among whom was Mr. Carver, their governor; and the seamen were so ill, that they were not in a condition to sail until

May, when the ship returned to England, to give their friends an account of the situation of the colony. After their departure, the colony made choice of Mr. Bradford for their governor, who enjoyed that post for many years, and saw the plantation thoroughly established, though their harmony was frequently disturbed by religious dissension.

In the year 1624 they sent a person to England, who procured a charter, that enabled the planters to elect a governor, council and magistrates, and make laws, provided they were not contrary to those of England, or encroached on the prerogatives of the crown. Thus this colony became firmly established, without any assistance from the North-Virginia company.

We are now to mention that, which, though later in point of time, is now become, in every respect, the most considerable. In the year 1625, Mr. White, minister of Dorchester, observing the success of the Plymouth colony, projected a new settlement in Massachuset's-bay; and, while some of his friends went over to make choice of a proper settlement, he procured a grant from the North-Virginia, or New-England company, of all that part of New-England that lies between the great river Merimack and Charles-river, at the bottom of Massachuset's-bay, and of all the lands three miles north of Merimack-river, and three miles south of Charles-river, and in length, between these rivers, from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea.

This new colony, which settled the town called Salem, was supported with the same spirit and vigour as the former, and soon after obtained a patent from king Charles I. whereby they were in-

corporated by the name of the Governor and Company of Massachuset's-bay, in New-England; and were empowered to make laws for the good of the plantation, not repugnant to those of England. Liberty of conscience being granted to all who would settle there, great numbers went over; and, in a short time two new settlements were made, the one called Charles-town, on the north side of Charles-river, and the other, Dorchester, at the bottom of Massachuset's-bay. Soon after, part of the inhabitants of Charles-town passing over to the opposite shore, erected Boston, which is now the capital of New-England.

As new planters arrived every year, the colony soon became over-stocked, and divisions breaking out among them, Mr. Roger Williams, pastor of a church of Brownists, settled without this government, and called his plantation Providence, which was afterwards united to the government of Rhode-island.

At length the Pequen Indians beginning to grow very troublesome, it was considered that a town and fort on Connecticut-river would make a good frontier on that side. Agents were, therefore, sent to view the country, who made such an advantageous report of the fertility of the soil, and the largeness of the river, as induced many planters to entertain thoughts of removing thither, several of the towns being already straitened for room.

Mr. Hooper, minister of New-town, put himself at the head of about a hundred of these new adventurers, who set out in the month of July, and travelling on foot with their children and baggage, about nine or ten miles a day, arrived at the banks of the river, where they began a town, which they

called Hartford. After these came another party, who built a small town, which they called Windsor; a third detachment built Weathersfield; and a fourth Springfield.

The towns thus built, being from fifty to sixty miles up this river, a ship, freighted with provisions at Massachuset's colony, for the use of these settlers, arrived so late in the year, that the mouth of the river was frozen up; on which many of the new adventurers travelled back in the depth of winter, and others, who attempted it, were frozen to death. However, those who had courage to stay until spring, carried on their settlements with such success, that they were not only in a capacity of subsisting, but were enabled to defend themselves against their enemies. They had a commission from the government of Massachuset's-bay; but finding they had extended their plantations beyond the limits of that colony, they entered into a voluntary association, agreeing to obey the laws that should be made by proper persons for the common good, and then chose a governor.

In this situation the colony of Connecticut continued, till they obtained a charter from king Charles II. authorising them to elect their own governor, council and magistrates, to form a political association, like that of England, and to enact such laws as should be thought most advantageous, provided they were in conformity to those of the mother-country.

Great numbers of people still removing to New England, and the old colonies being overstocked, there was an absolute necessity of forming new settlements, and, in 1637, Theophilus Eaton, Esq. and the Rev. Mr. Davenport, finding there was

not room at Massachusets-bay, and being informed of a larger bay to the south-west of Connecticut-river, purchased of the natives all the land between that river, and New York or Hudson's-river: thither they removed, and having seated themselves in the bay, over against Long-island, built New-haven, from whence that colony, province and government, were so denominated. They also built Guildford, Stamford, Milford and Brainford; then going over to Long-island, formed several settlements there, and erected churches in all the places where they settled. But being without the limits of the Massachusets jurisdiction, they had no charter, and no other title to the lands than what they purchased from the natives. The men who settled in this country were chiefly London merchants, who first applied themselves to trade, in which they followed the example of their governor, Mr. Eaton; but they met with so many losses and discouragements, that they resolved to remove to Maryland or to Ireland; but at last applying themselves to husbandry, they had surprising success, and therefore laid aside all thoughts of removing.

While the south-west parts of New England were thus filled with inhabitants, the north-east were not neglected; for as the English frequented the coast for the benefit of fishing and the fur-trade, a settlement was formed between the rivers Merimack and Sagadahock, which succeeded so well, that in a few years two countries were laid out, New Hampshire and Main, and several towns built, as, Dover, Hampton, Wells, Kittery, &c. These planters and traders being also settled without the limits of the Massachusets colony, voluntarily formed themselves into a body politic, after

the example of the Connecticut colony. Thus they continued, till being wearied out with feuds and divisions, they petitioned the general-court of the Massachusets colony to be brought within their jurisdiction; yet, in 1648, they made an absolute resignation of their charter, and the government remained in the hands of the crown until the American revolution.

In short, in the space of about twenty years, New England had above forty towns, and the people were in a happy and thriving condition.

New England comprehends four considerable colonies or governments. The Massachusets, which, with New Plymouth and the Main, were included in one charter; New Hampshire; Connecticut, comprehending New-haven; and Rhode-island, with Providence-plantation. The whole country extends from 41 to 45° north latitude, and lies between 67 and 73° of west longitude. It is bounded on the north-west, by Canada; on the north-east, by Nova Scotia; on the east and south, by the Atlantic Ocean; and on the west, by New York. It is in length somewhat more than three hundred miles, and, in some places, it is near two hundred in breadth. The air is sharper than ours, and the winters more severe, though it lies so much farther to the south; but then the summers are warmer. Their longest day at Boston is about sixteen hours, and their shortest about nine. The land, next the sea, is generally low, and, in some places, marshy; but farther up it rises into hills, and along the north-east the country is rocky and mountainous.

New England is, on the east and south, washed by the ocean; and has many good harbours, some of which are sufficiently capacious to contain large

fleets. There are few countries better watered; for besides several small lakes and rivulets, there are no less than seven navigable rivers; the most western of these is the Connecticut, which, rising in the north of New England, runs almost directly south, till it falls into the sea. The course of this river is at least two hundred miles, and it is navigable to a great height. At its mouth are two large towns, Saybrooke and Lime. To the east of this river lies the Thames, which is less considerable; it also runs south, and falls into the sea a little below New London: the river Patuxet rises in the north-west of the Massachusets colony, and running south-east, falls into a noble bay near Swansea: the river Merimack rises in the north, and runs directly south, for near one hundred miles, and then turning east, falls into the sea between Salisbury and Newberry: the river Piscataway runs from west to east, and falls into the sea at Portsmouth, where the opening is so large, that it affords a port capable of receiving the largest ships: the river Saco rises in the north of New England, and, running south, falls into the sea between capes Porpoise and Elizabeth; and the river Casco, running parallel with it, falls into a bay of its own name.

It is owing to the conveniency of so many fine rivers, that this country is so full of large and populous towns; and in the country between the rivers, there is such plenty of springs, that there is scarcely any place where water may not be had, by sinking a well to the depth of ten feet.

New England abounds with quadrupeds, both tame and wild; among the former are cows, sheep, hogs and horses, which, though they were originally brought from England, are now very nume-

rous; the latter, however, are of a smaller breed than ours; but they are extremely serviceable, and travel at a great rate.

As for beasts of the forest, they have most sorts, as deer, elks, racoons, bears, and a sort of wolves, which were used by the natives for dogs, and when taken very young, may be tamed. They have also hares, rabbits, foxes, squirrels, beavers, martins, and oppossums, which are of the size of a fox, and colour of a badger; its most remarkable peculiarity is, a false belly, wherein they hide their young, and from whence they may be taken without any prejudice either to them or to the animal itself.

But the moose-deer, which is somewhat like an elk, is one of the noblest beasts of the forest, and merits a particular description. There are two kinds, the common grey moose, that is like the ordinary deer, and sometimes herd thirty in a company; and the large black moose, which resembles the deer, in parting the hoof, chewing the cud, having no gall, and the ears large and erect. The hair upon the ridge of his back, which is of a dark grey, is ten or twelve inches long, and he has a short tail. A stag-moose is sometimes fourteen spans in height from the withers, which, reckoning nine inches to the span, is ten feet and a half. The horns of the moose, when full grown, are about four or five feet from the head to the tip, and have shoots or branches to each horn, which generally spread about six feet. Where the horns come out of the head they are round like those of an ox, but, about the distance of a foot, begin to grow a palm broad, and farther up are still wider; of these the Indians make good ladles, that will hold a pint.

When a moose goes through a thicket, or under the boughs of a tree, he lays his horns back on his neck, not only to place them out of his way, but to secure himself from being scratched in the woods; and these prodigious horns are shed every year. This animal does not spring or rise in going, like a deer; but a large one, in his common walk, has been seen to step over a gate five feet high. When a moose is unharboured, he will run a course of twenty or thirty miles before he turns about, or comes to a bay; but when chased they generally take to the water. He is not, however, as swift as the common deer, though he runs much farther. As the moose is tall and his neck short, he does not graze like other cattle; for when he eats grass, it is only the top of that which grows very high, or on steep rising grounds. They are fond of water-plants, for which they will wade far and deep. In summer they also feed upon other plants, herbs, and young shrubs, and in winter lives upon the tops of bushes and young trees. The flesh of the moose is very good food; it is more substantial than common venison, and will bear salting. The nose is admired as a great dainty.

There is hardly any where greater plenty of fowls, as turkeys, geese, partridges, ducks, wigeons, swans, heathcocks, herons, storks, dapers, blackbirds; all sorts of barn-door fowl, cormorants, ravens, &c.; and vast flights of pigeons return and depart at certain seasons of the year.

The sea and rivers afford excellent fish, in vast abundance, as sturgeon, salmon, cod, thornback, mackarel, herrings, smelts, lampreys, whales, grampusses, porpoises, seals, sharks, &c. The best months for fishing are March, April, May and June.

The woods and swamps afford plenty of good timber, as oak, elm, fir, cypress, fine chesnut, walnut, cedar, ash, beech, aspin and sassafras. All sorts of garden and orchard trees grow in perfection, so that a planter may make a hundred hogsheads of cyder in a season; and the export of apples to the sugar-islands is a constant article of trade in this province. Their apples are said to be larger and sweeter than those in England; and the same observation extends to their plumbs, cherries, peaches, pears, &c. There are also pompions and onions, water-melons and squashes. Vegetables are in great plenty, such as turnips, carrots, parsnips, and radishes, which are much larger and richer than in England, though their seeds originally came from thence. Flax and hemp grow as naturally here as in any country on the Baltic. Oats, barley, peas, beans, and indeed every thing of this kind, succeed as well as can be wished; and particularly maize, of which they plant great quantities. This corn, and kidney-beans, were found among the natives; and the Indians have a tradition, that the first grain of corn was brought thither by a blackbird, and the first bean by a crow.

The commerce of New England is very extensive. From thence the West India islands are furnished with fish, cattle, boards, hoops, pipe-staves, bark, skins, butter, cheese, oil, tobacco, corn, fruit, turpentine, &c. and that in such abundance, that it is computed the island of Barbadoes alone takes to the value of £200,000 every year. They export prodigious quantities of fish to Italy, Spain and Portugal. They take from England all kind of mercery goods, linen, stockings, shoes, sail-cloth, cordage, haberdashery ware, and a vast quantity of

other things: in [illegible]rn, they build a prodigious number of ships [illegible] the English merchants, and export to England a great deal of iron, and a vast quantity of masts, planks and yards for the royal navy; also pitch, tar, turpentine, skins, furs, oil, whale-fins, log-wood and other commodities.

The capital of New-England is Boston, in the county of Suffolk, and in the province of Massachusets Proper. It is situated in the latitude of 42° 21′, and 71° west longitude from London; it stands at the bottom of a fine bay, in a peninsula about four miles in circumference. At the entrance of this bay are several rocks, which appear above water, and upwards of a dozen small islands, some of which are inhabited. There is but one safe channel to approach the harbour, and that so narrow, that two ships can scarcely sail through abreast; but within the harbour there is room for five hundred sail to lie at anchor. The entrance is defended by the castle of Fort-William, a fine piece of military architecture, being surrounded by a covered way, joined by two lines of communication to the main-battery, and a line of communication from the main-gate to a redoubt. There are a hundred guns mounted in the castle, twenty of which are placed on a platform level with the water, so that it is scarcely possible for an enemy to pass the castle. To prevent surprise, they have a guard placed on one of the rocks, at about two leagues distance, from which they make signals to the castle on the approach of ships. There is also a battery of great guns at each end of the town, to the fire of which an enemy would be exposed, should it be so fortunate as to pass the castle.

At the end of the bay there is a pier near two

thousand feet in length, with warehouses for merchants on the north side; to which ships of the greatest burden may come up and unload, without the help of boats. The greatest part of the town lies round the harbour, in the form of a crescent: the country beyond rising gradually, and affording a delightful prospect from the sea.

CHAP. XII.

The first settlement of the Bermuda or Summer-islands. An account of five persons who sailed from them in a boat to Ireland. A description of those islands, their plants and animals; their present state, inhabitants and government.

THE Bermuda islands were discovered by John Bermudas, a Spaniard, after which they were frequently touched at by his countrymen, in their passage to the West Indies; but were unknown to the English until the year 1593, when one Henry May was shipwrecked on them in a French vessel: but they became very famous by sir George Summers and sir Thomas Gates suffering the same misfortune in their passage to Virginia, in 1609; of which we have before given an account, and of sir George Summers being sent thither a second time to fetch hogs, when he died on the island, upwards of sixty years of age. But though sir George directed his men to return to Virginia with black hogs for the relief of that colony, yet having stored their ship with provisions, they sailed for England, and arrived at White-church in Dorsetshire, with sir George Summer's corpse on board, leaving the heart and bowels at Bermuda, where, twelve years after, captain Butler built a handsome monument over them.

These men gave so favourable an account of the country to the Virginia company, that a hundred and twenty persons of the same society obtained a charter from king James, and became proprietors of these islands, whose name they changed to Summer's islands, from sir George. They are called Summer-islands by our mariners, a name they well deserve from their salubrity and fertility.

When sir George Summers first left these islands, two of his men, who had committed some crime, for which they would have been put to death, stayed behind, and were there at his return. They lived in St. George's island, where they supported themselves on the productions of the place, and built a hut. These two men, whose names were Christopher Carter, and Edward Waters, also remained behind sir George Summers' second company; and even enticed Edward Chard, another of his men, to stop with them. After some disputes, they joined together in making discoveries; and, in one of their expeditions, they found among the rocks, a large piece of ambergris, which weighed eighty pounds, besides several smaller pieces. To make the best use of this treasure, they resolved to build a boat, and sail to Virginia or Newfoundland. However, before they could put their project in execution, they were prevented by the arrival of a ship from England; for captain Matthew Summers, sir George's brother, had promised to come to them, or send a vessel to their relief. This ship was the Plough, with sixty persons on board, sent by the new Bermuda company, to make a settlement, of which Mr. Moore was to be governor. That gentleman chose a plain in St. George's island, and there built a cabin, large enough for his wife and family, which

he covered with palmetto-leaves; the rest of the adventurers following his example, it soon became a town of considerable size. It is now called George's-town, and is one of the strongest and best built of the American colonies; the houses are built of cedar, and all the forts are of hewn stone. Moore proved an excellent governor; and, in the year 1614, disappointed the Spaniards in a design they had formed of conquering these islands.

Mr. Moore was succeeded by captain Daniel Tucker, who, having a better education, and more experience, established a regular form of government, traced out plantations, obliged every man to build uniformly in the town, and plant regularly in the country; by which means the islands were much improved, and the exportations to England increased. He also established a militia, and placed the islands in a tolerable state of defence.

The severity of captain Tucker's government gave such disgust to some licentious persons, that five of them executed as desperate a design to escape, as Waters and his companions had proposed. They knew the governor would not give them leave to go off; and, therefore, hearing that captain Tucker had a great desire to go a fishing out to sea, but was afraid of doing it, because several fishing boats had been driven off by the weather, they proposed to build a boat of two or three tons, with a deck, and so fitted, that she should live in all weathers. The governor consenting to this, they began to build in the most retired part of the island, which they asserted to be the most convenient for getting timber and launching. These persons were Mr. James Barker, a gentleman; Richard Saunders, who contrived the design; Wil-

liam Goodwin, a ship-carpenter, who undertook to build the boat, and Henry Puet, a common sailor, who promised to navigate it.

They finished the boat sooner than was expected; but, when the governor sent for it, the messengers could neither find the boat nor the builders, and were told, that they had put to sea, in order to try how it would sail; but at last they found, from letters they had left behind them, that they were gone for England.

For this long and dangerous voyage, the little vessel was but ill provided. They borrowed a compass; and purchased a scanty supply of provisions from a ship that was bound for England; and one of them, on taking leave of the mariners, told them, that though they were forbidden to sail with them, they hoped to be in England before them, the master of the ship laughed at it. These fearless adventurers continued their course, for twenty-one days, with fair wind and weather; they then met with a storm, which lasted forty-eight hours, and drove them a little out of their course to the westward; but the wind coming fair again, and continuing so ten days, they went on chearfully. In that time they met with a French privateer, and went on board to beg some relief; but, instead of assistance, the privateer plundered them of all the little they had, took their compass, and then turned them adrift. In this miserable condition they sailed before the wind, growing every day weaker and weaker; their provisions were almost spent, their fire-wood quite gone, not a drop of fresh water left, nor food for above a day, when, in the very hour they expected to perish, to their unspeakable joy they made land, at the end of forty-two days, which

proved to be Ireland; where going on shore, in the county of Cork, they were nobly entertained by the earl of Thomond.

But to return to the colony. In the year 1619, captain Tucker resigned the government, and was succeeded by captain Butler. This officer arrived with four good ships, in which he brought 500 passengers; and there being as many English before on the island, the colony now began to make a considerable figure. This governor divided the islands into districts; and now the government, by a governor, council and assembly, was established, which before consisted only of the governor and council; and the laws of the country were settled as much like those of England, as the circumstance of the place would admit.

These islands lie in 32° 30′ north latitude, and in 35° west longitude, at a great distance from either continent; since the nearest land, which is cape Hattaras in Carolina, lies at least 250 leagues to the west of them, and they are above 1600 leagues from England. They lie very contiguous to each other, in the form of a shepherd's crook, and are very numerous; scarcely an eighth part of them are inhabited; and of those that are, all but St. George's, St. David's, and Cooper's isles, have only a few houses scattered up and down. They are all small. The largest, which is called St. George's, is only about 16 miles in length; its greatest breadth does not exceed a league; and it is fortified by nature all round, with rocks every way extending themselves a great way into the sea. To its natural strength, especially to the eastward, where it is most exposed, the inhabitants have added that of forts, batteries, parapets and lines, so well disposed,

that they command the several channels and inlets into the sea. There are no more than two places, where shipping can safely enter; and the rocks lie so thick, that, without a good pilot from the shore, a vessel of ten tons could not find the way into these harbours, which being once known, the largest ships may enter; but they are so well fortified, that if an enemy should attempt either of them, he might be easily kept out. Indeed all these islands are so environed with rocks, that they seem to threaten all the ships, that venture upon the coast, with destruction; and so many have been wrecked upon them, that the Spaniards gave them the name of Los Diabolos, or the Devil's Islands.

The air of these islands has been always thought extremely salubrious, and the appearance of every thing very delightful and charming; whence many have been accustomed to remove thither from the other colonies, in order to recover their broken constitutions. The heat in summer is very supportable, and with respect to winter, they have really none. Some even go so far as to affirm, that there is but one season, and that a perpetual spring, in which the trees never lose their verdure; for though the leaves at one time of the year fall off, others bud out at the same time. But notwithstanding the fineness of the climate, these islands are subject to storms of thunder and lightning.

There grow here all the plants found in the West-Indies; and all kinds of trees, herbs, roots and flowers, brought from Europe, thrive to perfection. Maize, or Indian corn, which is the principal support of the people, is twice reaped; for what they sow in March, they reap in July; in a fortnight after they sow again, and reap in December. Lau-

tel, olive, mulberry and date-trees, are very common; as are also palmettos, a kind of palm-tree, that is extremely useful; for the leaves being eight or ten feet long, and near as broad, they cover their houses with them instead of thatch or tiles. These trees produce a very luscious fruit, in shape, size and colour, resembling a damson. Their forests also abound with a variety of odoriferous woods; some black, some yellow, and some of a red colour. The berries of these trees have the styptic quality of a sloe; and are much used by the English to cure the dysentery, which they frequently get by eating the luscious palm-berries too greedily.

Amongst the multitude of shrubs and trees, that are peculiar to these islands, and valuable both for their timber and fruit, there are two, which, though found in other parts of the world, have a peculiar excellence here; the first is the orange-tree, whose fruit, in point of size, scent and flavour, far exceeds those either in the West or East-Indies; the second is the cedar, which is firmer and more durable than any of its kind we are acquainted with, and answers in every respect to oak-timber. It is therefore used in ship-building; and the best sloops, brigantines, and other small vessels, in use throughout the West-Indies, are built at the Bermudas. They have also a very singular plant, called the Summer-island red-wood; the berry of which is as red as the prickle-pear, and also gives the same kind of tincture: out of this berry come first worms, these afterwards turn into flies, something bigger than the cochineal-fly, and have a medicinal virtue much exceeding it. They have also a plant, called the poison-weed, that grows much in the same manner as our ivy; but this is the only noxious thing in any of these islands.

As for animals, there were none in the Bermudas but hogs, insects and birds, when sir George Summers was shipwrecked there. These hogs he found by sending out two or three of his own to feed, which rambling home, a huge wild boar followed them, and being killed, was found excellent meat. The hogs they afterwards killed were all black; whence it is concluded that the Spaniards left them there to breed, because they were of the same kind with those they carried to the continent of America.

These islands abound in more fowl, and in a greater variety, than are to be found in any part of America. There are swans, moor-hens, teal, snipe, ducks, widgeons, herons, bitterns, ospreys, baldcoots, cormorants, and hawks of all sorts; bats and owls are also very common; and there are multitudes of small birds, as wood-peckers, sparrows, &c. The English, at their first coming, found a sort of fowl, called cowkoes, that bred in the holes of rocks. They were extremely numerous, and so gentle, that they were taken without attempting to escape; but they are now almost destroyed. This bird is of the size of a sea-mew. There is also the tropic-bird, and the pemlico.

They have as great plenty of fish as of fowl, and in such variety, that their names are unknown to naturalists; they have also great numbers of turtle, which are as good and large as any in the world.

The insects are generally the same with those of the other West-India islands, except the spider, which is thought to be larger here than in any other country in the world; but the beautiful colours wherewith they are adorned, take off very much from that distaste, which otherwise the sight of creatures of this kind, and of so enormous a size,

would naturally occasion. One of these spiders, with his legs extended, takes up a space equal to that of a man's hand with his fingers spread out. Their bodies are composed of two parts, one flat, and the other round; not unlike, either in shape or size, to a pigeon's egg. On their backs they have an orifice, which, as in American hogs, is taken for a navel: their mouths are covered with a kind of grey hairs, sometimes intermixed with bright red; and on each side of their mouths they have a crooked tooth, of a fine polished substance, extremely hard, and of a bright shining black; and they are often set in silver or gold for tooth-picks. When these creatures grow old, they are entirely covered with a dark brown or black down, smooth and soft, resembling velvet. On the flat part they have their ten legs, five on each side; each of these has four joints, and two small claws at the end. They cast their skins and teeth every year; and live upon flies and gnats, in the catching of which they show great cunning, and no less agility. Their webs are very large and strong, and are usually fastened between two trees.

The town of St. George stands at the bottom of the haven of the same name, covered by no less than six or seven sorts of batteries, mounted with above seventy pieces of cannon, so disposed, that they may be all brought to bear upon any ship, before she can enter the harbour. In this town there is a fine church, with a good library, for which the inhabitants are indebted to Dr. Thomas Bray.

Besides the town and division of St. George, there are eight tribes; viz. Hamilton's tribe, Smith's tribe, Devonshire tribe, Pembroke's tribe, Poget's tribe, Warwick's tribe, Southampton's tribe, and

Sandy's tribe; of which Devonshire in the north, and Southampton in the south, are parishes, and have each a church and a particular library; but there are no parish churches in any of the lesser islands: for all the inhabitants are ranged under one or other of these eight tribes.

The government is vested in the crown, which appoints both the governor and council; but the people, by their representatives, compose the assembly. They have fewer bye-laws than any of the English settlements, which may be imputed to the smallness of their trade: for this colony produces no considerable commodity, whereby the inhabitants might obtain riches; as their commerce principally consists in timber and provisions, in building ships and sloops, and a trifling export of tobacco to England. The people of the Summer-islands seem to content themselves with the plenty and pleasure that their country affords, enjoying a quiet and retired life from the cares and anxieties of the rest of the world. In short, the inhabitants have constantly maintained a most excellent reputation, and the Bermudas are equally remarkable for the fineness of the country, and the honesty and integrity of the people.

The beauty of the country, and the amiable character of the inhabitants, induced the learned dean Berkeley to endeavour to erect an academy at the Bermudas, for promoting useful learning and religion in the West Indies; when the society for the propagation of the gospel assisted him in procuring a patent from George I. for erecting a seminary there, and contributed to the expence of the undertaking. Dr. Berkeley, and three Fellows of Trinity College, Dublin, with several of his rela-

tions, actually embarked on this undertaking; but being driven by a storm to Long-island, in the province of New York, the doctor, with his companions, visited Boston, and some of the most considerable towns in New England, where they preached; but the design of erecting a college being laid aside, they returned home, and Dr. Berkeley was soon after promoted to the see of Cloyne, in Ireland.

CHAP. XIII.

Hudson's and Button's voyages for the discovery of a north-west passage.

WHILE these discoveries were making, the merchants of England again attempted to find a new passage to the Indies, by the north-east and north-west; and in particular fitted out Mr. Henry Hudson, in 1603, who undertook to sail directly north, which he did to the height of 81° 30′, where he found the weather in July pretty warm. He proposed to have passed round the great tract of country called, by the Danes, Groenland; afterwards to fall into Davis's Straits, and then return home; but being disappointed in this, he undertook two voyages for the discovery of a north-east passage, but with no better success. At last he resolved to make an attempt towards the north-west, and set sail on this voyage, in April, 1610. He now proceeded to the mouth of Davis's Straits, then steered directly west, and afterwards sailed through those straits that now bear his name, till he doubled Cape Worsenham; after which, he sailed down the west coast of New Britain, to the

very bottom of the bay, where he made choice of a place to winter in, that was almost as far south as any part of Great Britain, in hopes of performing something very considerable in the ensuing spring. However, the hardships the men endured while they wintered in this place were exceedingly great. The cold was so extreme, that it lamed most of the company; but during the first three months, they saw such flights of white partridges, that they killed above one hundred dozen, besides other fowl.

At the approach of spring, the partridges left them, and were succeeded by swans, geese, ducks and teal; but these were difficult to catch. They flew from the south to the north, and whenever a northerly wind arose, staid until it veered to the opposite point.

At the approach of summer, these also disappeared, and the men were obliged by hunger to search the woods, hills and valleys, for any thing that might serve for food. The frogs, though in their engendering time, when they were as loathsome as toads, were not spared; and they also fed on the moss that grew on the ground. As soon as the ice began to break, one of the natives came to the ship, and sold them some furs and skins for knives and hatchets; and when the sound began to clear of the ice, so that the boat could move from place to place, several of the men were sent to catch fish, in which they had pretty good success, though not sufficient to supply the wants of the ship's company. At length, some of the men resolving to get the little provisions that were left to themselves, barbarously contrived to turn captain Hudson, the carpenter, and all the sick men, out of the ship, and to make the best of their way for

England. This they performed, by forcing captain Hudson and eight more into the chaloupe, without provisions, though most of them were taken sick out of bed, and after that time they were never heard of more. The mutineers did not escape much better; for being obliged to land frequently on these desert coasts to obtain subsistance, most of them were killed by the inhabitants, and the few who remained returned to England in a miserable condition.

Upon the imperfect account of Hudson's Bay received from Pricket, one of these men, several persons who had been already engaged in expeditions for the discovery of a north-west passage, began to hope that they had now a fairer prospect than ever of bringing it to bear, and therefore applying to Henry, prince of Wales, who was then the great patron of learning, his royal highness resolved to send captain Button, a man of great abilities, courage and experience; and accordingly he sailed in the year 1611 on this expedition; passed Hudson's Straits, and then leaving Hudson's Bay to the south, sailed above two hundred leagues to the north-west, through a sea above eighty fathoms deep, and discovered a great tract of land, called by him New Wales. He wintered at Port Nelson, in 57° 10′ north latitude, where the men suffered greatly by the cold, and many of them died, though he kept three fires in the ship all the winter; and had great plenty of white partridges, and other fowl, besides deer, bears and foxes. The next summer he carefully searched all the bay, from him called Button's Bay, back almost to Digge's-island, and discovered the great island, called Cary's Swan's-nest,

On his return from this voyage he received the honour of knighthood; and great expectations were raised from his discoveries, which would certainly have been farther prosecuted, if prince Henry had not died soon after.

CHAP. XIV.

An account of the settlement and produce of Barbadoes.

IT is not easy to determine by whom Barbadoes was discovered; but, it is most probable, that it was first seen by the Portuguese. However, the first Englishmen who landed there, are said to have been some of sir William Curteen's seamen, that were cruising in those seas, in the latter end of the reign of king James I.; and they, on their return to England, reporting that the soil was fruitful, some adventurers went thither, in order to plant it; but the island being covered with wood, and there being scarcely any other animals on it than hogs, it was a long time before it answered their expectations.

In the first year of the reign of king Charles I. the property of this island was granted by that prince to James, earl of Carlisle, of whom several adventurers purchased shares, and began with planting tobacco; but it not succeeding, they proceeded to try cotton and indigo, which yielded considerable profit. Little sugar was made in the island until the year 1647, when colonel Modiford, colonel Walrond, colonel Drax, and several other cavaliers, not choosing to stay in England after the king's death, converted their estates into money, and em-

barking for Barbadoes, with such machines and implements as were proper for manufacturing sugar, had such success, that, in a few years, colonel Drax is said to have acquired an estate of seven or eight thousand pounds sterling per annum. The adventurers fixed their principal settlement on the great bay, in the south-west part of the island, and gave it the name of Carlisle-bay, in honour of the proprietor, which it still retains.

Afterwards the island was divided into four circuits, and eleven parishes, each parish sending two representatives to the general assembly. So prodigious was the increase of the inhabitants, that, in the year 1650, they amounted to between thirty and forty thousand white persons, besides the Negroes, who were much more numerous, and frequently plotted the destruction of their masters; but their plots were constantly discovered, and the most terrible punishments inflicted on the ring-leaders. However, the cruelties suffered by those, who thus endeavoured to recover their liberty, only tended to increase the disaffection of the rest, and laid the foundation of fresh conspiracies; notwithstanding which, no colony of so small an extent, within the short space of thirty or forty years, ever before arrived at such riches and grandeur. The parliament thought this island of such consequence, that in the year 1651 they sent a strong squadron, under the command of sir George Ascue, who compelled the governor, lord Willoughby, to surrender the island, on condition that the royalists should remain in possession of their estates and liberties. Mr. Searl then was appointed governor.

In the Dutch war the colony was prohibited from trading with the Hollanders, who until this time

had constantly furnished the island with Negroes, and taught the settlers to plant and manage their sugars to the best advantage, most of which they took off their hands, in order to supply themselves and the rest of Europe. The settlers were likewise compelled by the parliament to bring all their sugars directly to England; this measure was also adopted by the ministry, after the restoration of Charles II. and is the foundation of the act of navigation, which requires all the British colonies to bring their sugars and tobaccos to England, and prohibits their trading with foreigners in these and some other articles.

The vast success of this first sugar colony promoted the settlement of others; and, as the sugar plantations increased, more hands were required to carry on the work, than could, at that time, be spared from home. This gave birth to the Guinea trade, for supplying those colonies with Negroe slaves; and, as the planters flourished and increased, so did their demands for all sorts of British manufactures, and such of the necessaries of life as could not be obtained in that climate, which opened new sources of trade for the British merchants. In short, the act of navigation, by obliging all the sugar to be brought to Great Britain, soon made London the chief mart in Europe for sugar; and there being annually more imported than was necessary for home consumption, the merchants exported the surplus to foreign markets, and by underselling the Portuguese, monopolized almost all their sugar trade to the northward of Cape Finisterre.

In the year 1668, king Charles II. purchased the property of this island from lord Kinowl, heir to

the earl of Carlisle, and appointed lord Willoughby governor; on which the colony granted a duty of four and a half per cent. for the support of the civil government, and for maintaining the forces and fortifications of the island.

The island of Barbadoes is situated in the Atlantic Ocean, in 13 degrees north latitude, and 59 degrees west longitude. It is of a triangular form, and where broadest, about twenty-five miles from north to south, and only fifteen from east to west. It is, for the most part, a plain level country, with some small hills of an easy ascent, and though covered with woods when the English first settled there, they have been all cut down, to make way for plantations of sugar-canes, which, at present, take up almost the whole island; for the chief part of their provisions are imported from the northern colonies.

There is scarcely a harbour on the island; the best is that of Bridge-town, in Carlisle-bay, which lies open to the westward, but is secure from the north-east. From this point the wind almost constantly blows here, except during the summer months, when they are visited by tornadoes and hurricanes. At such times the ships in the bay are in the utmost danger of being driven on shore, if they cannot get out to sea; and therefore they seldom attempt to ride out these storms.

The coast is defended on the east from the invasion of an enemy, by rocks and shoals; and on the west, where it is most exposed to a descent, breastworks and redoubts are erected. There is scarcely a stream in the country, that deserves the name of a river, though there are two on the east side, to which they have given the names of Scotland river and Joseph's-river. They have good water in their

wells almost over the whole island, and do not dig very deep for it: they have also large ponds and reservoirs, where they preserve rain water. The weather is generally fine and serene; and their rains, as in other parts of the torrid zone, chiefly fall when the sun is vertical; and after these are the proper seasons for planting.

Their heats are not so excessive as in the same latitude on the east side of the continent of America; the air being constantly refreshed by the trade-wind, which increases as the sun advances, and abates as the sun declines; but there being no mountains on the island, the trade-wind is not interrupted.

The only town of any consequence in the island, is that of Bridge-town, or St. Michael's, in Carlisle-bay. The chief produce of the island is sugar and rum; they have also some cotton, indigo and pimento. They have scarcely any forest trees left; but their fruits are oranges, limes, citrons, pomegranates, pine-apples, guavas, plantanes, cocoa-nuts, Indian figs, prickle-pears and melons; with almost every kind of roots, but very few flowers.

Their horses they import from New England, and they have a slight breed of their own. They have also some asses, cows and sheep; but the last do not thrive here: however, they have a great number of hogs. They have good poultry and sea-fish, but no fresh-water fish; and all kinds of provisions are very dear. Fresh meat is a rarity, and chiefly the food of the rich; the rest are glad of salt pork, beef and fish, imported from the northern colonies; from whence also come their wheat, flour, Indian corn, beans, peas, &c. They make bread also of the cassavi root, and the negroes are fed on

yams, potatoes, and other roots and fruits. The chief drink of the gentry is Madeira wine, and wine and water; and great quantities of rum punch are consumed by the vulgar. They have also strong beer, imported from New and Old England, and liquors made of maize and fruit. Sugar, molasses, rum, cotton, ginger and aloes, are the principal exports.

CHAP. XV.

The settlement of St. Christopher's, Nevis, Montserrat, Barbuda, Anguilla, and Antigua; their produce, &c.

THE island of St. Christopher's, called by the natives Liamuega, was discovered by Christopher Columbus, in his first voyage to America, who gave it the name of St. Christopher's. It is situated in 17 degrees north latitude, and is about 73 miles in circumference. It was inhabited by the Caribbees, with whom the Spaniards maintained the most friendly intercourse; for, in their voyages to the West-Indies, they usually touched at this island, to take in fresh water, and sometimes left their sick there, who were always taken the greatest care of.

In this state the island continued, until the English and the French, nearly at the same time, undertook to establish themselves in it. Sir Thomas Warner, an English adventurer, and Monsieur Desnambue, a French gentleman, who commanded for the French in America, arrived at St. Christopher's on the same day; and both took possession of the island, in the names of their respective sovereigns. After leaving some of their men, each returned to their respective countries for recruits;

and their sovereigns, approving of their conduct, sent them back, in 1626, with supplies of men and provisions, and commissions to be governors of the new settlements. Monsieur Desnambue arrived there in the January of 1627, with about 300 people, after a long and sickly voyage. The English colony had as many men, and sir Thomas had proceeded a good way in his settlement, before Monsieur Desnambue's arrival. The two governors, therefore, to prevent any disputes respecting the limits of their respective territories, on the 13th of May, 1627, set boundaries to their several divisions, with this particular proviso, that fishing and hunting should be equally free to the inhabitants of both nations; that the salt-ponds, and most valuable timber, should be in common, together with the mines and havens; and a league, offensive and defensive, was concluded between them; after which they proceeded with great harmony.

The English receiving supplies of men and provisions from London, throve better than the French, and were soon enabled to spare men for forming plantations at Nevis; of which sir Thomas Warner took possession, and left a settlement there, in the year 1628.

The Spaniards, being alarmed at the progress of the English and French in the Caribbee-islands, thought the safety of their own settlements required their preventing those nations from establishing themselves in their neighbourhood. They therefore, in the following year, sent Don Frederic de Toledo, with a fleet of 24 ships and 15 frigates, to dispossess them. The English and French were unable to oppose such an enemy: the French immediately embarked; and the English were so

alarmed by the desertion of the French, that some endeavoured to escape by sea, others fled to the mountains, and those who remained, sent deputies to treat with the Spaniards.

Don Frederic having them now in his power, commanded all on the island to depart immediately, on pain of being put to the sword; and to enable them to comply with this order, he gave them the ships he had taken at Nevis: but as there was not room in these ships to carry off all the people with their families, he consented that those who could not embark should stay till they could be removed.

Don Frederick having made these regulations, weighed anchor, taking with him six hundred of the English, who were fittest for his service. But he was no sooner gone, than the English who were left resolved to go on with the settlement; when the French, who were got no farther than Antigua and Montserrat, sent a ship for intelligence to St. Christopher's; and being informed, that the Spaniards were gone, and the English busy in rebuilding and planting, they rejoiced at this happy and unexpected turn, and, sailing back to the island, resumed the possession of their former habitations.

The English now continued carrying on their colony till they were able to spare more men for settlements at Bermuda, Montserrat and Antigua, which were peopled and planted by sir Thomas Warner. At the same time, the Dutch made themselves masters of St. Eustatia, and the French took possession of some other islands. Meanwhile the English built houses, and had wives and families; while the French lived in huts, after the Caribbean manner; and, as few of them married, they took less pains to furnish themselves with the necessa-

ries or conveniences of life. Monsieur Desnambue died about the year 1637, and sir Thomas Warner did not long survive him; but before this last gentleman's death, the colony increased so much, that the English inhabitants of the island amounted to between 12 and 13,000.

The chief employment of the first planters was, cultivating tobacco, by which they gained a competent livelihood; but afterwards, the quantity lowering the price, they, in several places, applied themselves to the planting of sugar, ginger, indigo and cotton, and in a little time became a rich and flourishing people. The French and English lived cordially together, until the war in the reign of queen Anne, when the English drove them entirely from the settlement; and the country being ceded to the crown of Great Britain, by the treaty of Utrecht, all the French territory was sold for the benefit of the public.

Though St. Christopher's is the largest of all the Caribbee-islands, the middle part of it being extremely mountainous, it is thought there are not above 24,000 acres of land fit for sugar in the whole island; and yet it annually produces about 10,000 hogsheads of that valuable commodity.

It has been already observed, that sir Thomas Warner settled Nevis or Mevis, about the year 1628, and, notwithstanding the English had been dispossessed by the Spaniards, the inhabitants of that island, in 20 years, amounted to at least 4000 people; and they continued increasing in the same manner, for a considerable time, having no enemy to fear, but the hurricanes, which generally visited them once a year.

When sir William Stapleton was governor of

these islands, he usually made this the place of his residence, and most of the affairs of government were transacted here; for each of the Leeward-islands has a lieutenant-governor, council and assembly, while the entire government centers in the captain-general.

In the reign of king James II. Nevis supplied the other islands with almost all their wines and Negroes, and was computed to contain above ten thousand persons, besides Negroes, who amounted to above twenty thousand. What prodigious improvement must then have been made of this little island, which is not more than twenty miles in circumference, to render it capable of maintaining above thirty thousand inhabitants!

The island of Montserrat, so called by the Spaniards, from its resembling a mountain in Catalonia, of the same name, famous for a chapel dedicated to the Blessed Virgin, is situated in 17 degrees north latitude, and is about three leagues in length, and almost as much in breadth, so that it seems to be round. It was discovered by Columbus at the same time with St. Christopher's, but no settlement was made on it until 1632, when sir Thomas Warner procured a small colony to settle there. This island at first flourished more than Antigua, but since lord Willoughby's time, the latter has got the start of it. Sixteen years after its being first inhabited, there were seven hundred men in the island, and the rolls of the militia amounted to three hundred and sixty. The climate, soil, animals, trade and productions of Montserrat, are the same with those of the other Caribbee islands. This, however, is fuller of mountains, which are covered with cedars and other trees, that afford a delightful prospect

from the sea. The valleys are fruitful, and are better supplied with fresh water than those of Antigua. The population is computed at about 4,500 whites, and 12,000 Negroes.

The island of Barbuda, which was planted by sir Thomas Warner, as early as Montserrat, is situated in 17° 30′ north latitude, and is about fifteen miles long. The first colony was so often disturbed, that the people were frequently forced to desert their plantation; hardly passing a year in which the Caribbees did not make one or two incursions, and that generally in the night, for they durst not attack them by day; so that the English grew weary of dwelling in a place, where they were so much exposed to the fury of the natives; and, therefore, deserted the island. But the Caribbees diminishing daily in number, and the Europeans in the other islands increasing, the English again possessed themselves of Barbuda; the inhabitants of which, in the course of a few years, increased considerably. The proprietor chooses the governor, and has the same privileges as the other lords-proprietors in their several jurisdictions in America. The inhabitants apply themselves chiefly to the breeding of cattle, for which there is always a good market in the sugar-islands.

The next plantation is that of Anguilla, or Snake-island, so called from its figure; it being long, narrow, and almost winding about. It is near St. Martin's, from whence it may be seen; and lies in 18° 12′ north latitude. The country is extremely level, and there is not a mountain in it; however, it is very woody. In the broadest part of it there is a pond, about which the English settled in the year 1650, and applied themselves to the planting of

corn and the breeding of cattle. They were afterwards joined by some people from Barbadoes, and other of the English Caribbee-islands, who, incorporating with the rest, learned their manners, and though they amounted to one hundred and fifty families, or nine hundred persons, lived without minister or magistrate among them. They apply themselves to farming, in which they have had very good success, and, like the patriarchs of old, every man is a kind of sovereign in his own family.

Antigua, or Antego, is the last of these islands settled by the English. Sir Thomas Warner attempted to form a settlement there, but without success: but Francis, lord Willoughby, who was governor of Barbadoes, obtaining a grant of it from king Charles II. in 1633, planted a colony there in about three years after. It is situated in 16° 11′ north latitude, and in 63° west longitude from London. The form is circular, twenty miles in diameter, and near sixty in circumference. The climate is far from being agreeable, as it is warmer than in Barbadoes, and very subject to hurricanes. The soil is sandy and great part of the land is overgrown with wood. The greatest disadvantage is, there being but few springs, and not a single rivulet in the whole island; so that the people depend chiefly upon rain-water, which they collect in cisterns, and for the want of which, in dry seasons, they are sometimes considerably distressed; yet, notwithstanding these inconveniences, it is a very flourishing plantation.

Antigua is divided into five parishes, four of which are towns, as St. John's-town, to the northward, which is the capital of the island, and consists of about two hundred houses; and Falmouth,

Parham, and Bridge-town, to the southward. The other parish is St. Peter's.

Besides St. John's-harbour, which is the most commodious, there are other very good ones, as Fiveisland-harbour, so called from five little islands to the westward of the isle of Carlisle-bay; English-harbour, at the bottom of which is Falmouth-town, defended by Charles-fort; next to it is Willoughby-bay; off which is Green-island; next to this is Nonsuch-harbour, which is a spacious bay. There are also several little islands, particularly to the northward. The forts are in good repair; that of Monk's-hill is mounted with thirty pieces of ordnance; the other, erected at St. John's-harbour, is mounted with fourteen; and there are seven other batteries erected for the defence of so many landing-places.

There are greater plenty of cattle and other animals, especially venison, in this, than in any other of the Caribbee-islands; the vegetable produce is much the same. When Antigua was first planted, sugar, indigo, ginger and tobacco, were its chief commodities; but now ginger and indigo are seldom cultivated there. The sugar and tobacco were both of the bad sort, and the former was so black and coarse, that no art seemed capable of refining it. But the planters of Antigua now make as good Muscovado-sugar as any of the sugar-islands; and though there is not much tobacco planted in this island, yet what there is now, is not so bad as it was formerly.

CHAP. XVI.

The settlement of Maryland. Its climate, soil and produce.

MARYLAND was esteemed a part of Virginia, until the year 1632, when king Charles I. made a grant of all the country not then planted, on the north of Potowmac-river, to Cecilius Calvert, lord Baltimore, and his heirs; and this part of the country was afterwards called Maryland, in honour of Henrietta-Maria, the queen-consort. Lord Baltimore sent his brother, Leonard Calvert, Esq. with some catholic gentlemen, and other adventurers, to the number of two hundred, to take possession of the country; who sailing from England on the 23d of November, arrived at Point Comfort, in Chesapeake-bay, on the 24th of February following, where being supplied with provisions by the English of Virginia, they continued their voyage northward to the river Potowmac, which was appointed the boundary between Virginia and Maryland.

The adventurers sailed up this river, and landing at several places on the northern shore, informed the inhabitants that they were come to trade and settle among them; but though the natives did not seem to desire their company, no acts of hostility were committed on either side; and the English, returning down the river Potowmac again, chose a place near the mouth of a river which falls into it, and which they called St. George's-river, and there settled their first colony. They afterwards advanced to an Indian town, called Yeamaco, the capital of

the country; and at a conference with the weoranec, or sovereign of the place, to whom they made considerable presents, he consented that they should dwell in one part of the town, and his own people in the other, till after harvest; and that being over, they should resign the whole to the English, and retire farther into the country, which they accordingly did. It was also agreed on both sides, that if any wrong was done by either party, the nation offending should make full satisfaction. The reason which induced the Yeamaco Indians to enter so readily into a treaty with the English, and to yield them a part of their country, was the hope of obtaining their protection and assistance against their more northern neighbours, the Sasquahannah Indians, with whom they were then at war.

The English having thus, by the most lawful methods, obtained possession of the town, gave it the name of St. Mary's, and immediately applied themselves with great diligence in cultivating the ground, and raising large quantities of Indian corn, while the natives went every day into the woods to hunt for game, bringing venison and turkeys to the English in great abundance, for which they received knives, tools and toys. Thus both nations lived in the greatest friendship, doing mutual good offices for each other, until some of the English settlers in Virginia, envying the happiness of this thriving colony, wickedly suggested to the Indians, that these strangers were not really English, as they pretended, but Spaniards, who would enslave them, as they had done already to many of their countrymen.

The Indians being so credulous as to believe this report, grew jealous of Mr. Calvert, and made

preparations for attacking the colony, which the English perceiving, stood upon their guard, and erected a fort for their security, on which they planted several pieces of ordnance, the report of which so terrified the natives, that they abandoned the country, and left the English in full possession of it, who, continually receiving supplies and reinforcements from England, soon became a flourishing people; many catholic families of quality and fortune settling there, in order to avoid the penal laws, then in force against them in England; and, for a considerable time, Maryland continued a place of refuge for those of that persuasion. No part of America can boast of having had fewer disturbances on account of religion; for, though the colony now consists of persons of different persuasions, as Christians they live together in the greatest tranquillity, which appears by their kind behaviour to the Indians, with whom they have scarcely had any difference.

Maryland is situated between 38 and 40 degrees north latitude, and between 44 and 48 degrees west longitude; however, the western boundaries are very uncertain, some extending them beyond the Alligany mountains. This province is bounded by part of Pensylvania and the Atlantic Ocean on the east, by Virginia on the south, and the Alligany mountains on the west. The length from north to south is about a hundred and forty miles; but the breadth, so far as it is planted, is not so considerable. The north end of the bay of Chesapeake divides Maryland into two parts, called the eastern and western shores.

The face of the country, like that of Virginia, may be divided into the low lands next the sea, the

hilly country towards the heads of rivers, and the Alligany mountains, which are exceeding high, and run from the north-east to the south-west, parallel to the Atlantic Ocean. The low lands formerly consisted of swamps and woods, and were almost one continued forest, until the English cleared part of it, either to make room for their plantations, in building ships and houses, or making tobacco-hogsheads and pipe-staves for exportation, which has made such havoc among the woods, that near towns and rivers, the people begin to want timber. Towards the heads of rivers there is a mixture of hills and valleys, well planted with a variety of timber and fruit-trees; and, where these are wanting, there are large savannahs or meadows, where the grass grows to a surprising height.

The country is watered by innumerable springs and a great many fine rivers, the chief whereof are, the Potowmac, which, rising in the mountains north-west, runs to the mountains south-east, separates Maryland from Virginia on the south-west, and then falls into the middle of Chesapeake-bay; the river Pocomoac, which rises near the ocean, and runs directly south, until turning to the west, it also falls into Chesapeake-bay near Watkin's-point; the river Patuxent rises in Arundel county, and turning to the south-east, falls into Chesapeake-bay, about twenty miles to the northward of the river Potowmac; Severn-river rises on the north-west, runs south-east, and falls into the upper part of the same bay; Cheptonk-river rises on the eastern shore, and running to the south-west, falls into the same bay; Sassafras-river rises in the north-east, and running almost due west, falls into the north end of the same bay; Wicomo-river rises on the eastern

shore, runs to the south-west, and falls into the bay almost against the mouth of Potowmac-river; St. George's river, on the west side of the bay, runs from north to south, and falls into the mouth of the river Potowmac. There are many other rivers capable of receiving large ships, which, with the numerous bays and creeks, wherewith the land on every side is indented, afford the advantage of bringing vessels to the very doors of the planters.

Though the weather in summer is very warm, yet their heats are seldom troublesome, and then only in a perfect calm, which does not last above a few hours at a time, and this seldom happens; even this inconvenience is made tolerable by their cool shades, their open and airy rooms, arbours and grottoes. In spring and autumn the weather is as pleasant as can be wished; even the winters do not last above three or four months, and in these they have seldom one month's bad weather. During all the rest they have a clear bright sun, and they are scarcely ever troubled with fogs. Sometimes, indeed, they have hard frosts, but they last no longer than while the wind blows from the north and north-west points, which is seldom more than three or four days; at other times they have no frost at all. Their rains, unless in the depth of winter, are pleasant and refreshing, and in summer continue but a few hours. However, the summer showers are very heavy for the time they last; and that part of the country which lies near the sea and mouths of rivers, is certainly hot and moist, but higher up the country the air is more agreeable, especially since the land has been cleared of wood. During the heat of summer they have dreadful thunder;

but as it cools and refreshes the air, the people rather wish for it than fear it.

Maryland is divided into ten counties, of which the following six are on the west side of the bay; St. Mary's county, Charles's county, Prince George's county, Calvert county, Anne-Arundel county, and Baltimore county: the counties on the east side of the bay are, Somerset county, Dorchester county, Talbot county, and Cecil county. The capital of the province is Annapolis, which is situated on the Severn. The tobacco of this province, called Oroonoko, is stronger than that of Virginia, and is as profitable to the planter, there being a great demand for it in the eastern and northern parts of Europe, where it is preferred before the sweet-scented tobacco of James's and York rivers in Virginia, whence the planters of Maryland finding so good a vent for it in foreign markets, have cultivated it so much, that this province is thought to produce as much tobacco as Virginia, and several hundred sail of ships are annually employed in the commerce.

The soil here is as fruitful as any other country, it being a large plain interspersed with hills, of so easy an ascent, and of such a moderate height, that they rather seem an artificial than a natural ornament. The abundance of rivers and brooks are no small help to the fertility of the soil; and there is no grain, plant or tree which grows in Virginia, but thrives as well here, the produce and animals being the same.

CHAP. XVII.

The conquest of Jamaica. Its description and productions; the manner in which indigo is prepared.

OLIVER Cromwell being sensible of the advantages the Spaniards obtained from their provinces in America, formed a project for taking from them the fine island of Hispaniola; and, for that purpose, sent a large squadron of men of war, with a fleet of transports, commanded by Penn and Venables, with which they sailed from Portsmouth, and arrived at Barbadoes on the 15th of January, 1654; afterwards they sailed to Hispaniola, where, being repulsed with loss, it was resolved to try what could be done against the island of Jamaica.

The fleet and troops being arrived at this last island, general Venables issued orders, that if any man attempted to run away, the next man to him should put him to death; and, that if he failed to do it, he should be liable to be tried for his life. The troops were no sooner landed than they advanced towards the fort, which they made themselves masters of with little loss, and early the next morning began to march towards the savannah near the town, when some Spaniards coming forward, desired to treat, but this Venables refused, unless they would send his men a constant supply of provisions, of which they were in great want; to this the Spaniards consented, and actually performed their promise, after which the following articles were agreed upon: that all the forts, arms, ammunition and warlike stores, all the shipping in the harbours of the island, and all wares, merchandize,

Venables taking possession of Jamaica

Maguire Sculp.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

&c. should be delivered up to general Venables, for the use of the protector and the commonwealth of England; that all the inhabitants of the island, except some that were particularly named, should have their lives granted; that those who chose it, should have leave to stay, and the others be transported to New Spain, or some other of his catholic majesty's dominions in America, together with their apparel, books and papers; that the commissioned officers alone, at their departure, should be permitted to wear their side-arms; and that the artificers and planters should be permitted to remain in the island to enjoy their properties, provided they conformed to the laws that should be established.

Thus the fine island of Jamaica was subdued; and, though the Spaniards continued to lurk about some parts of it for several years afterwards, and once made a bold attempt to recover the place, yet colonel Doyly forced them to withdraw, and so effectually reduced the whole island, that at the restoration of king Charles II. the Spaniards ceded it to the crown of Great Britain, to which it has belonged ever since, and is the noblest possession it has in those parts.

Jamaica is situated in between 17 and 18 degrees north latitude, and between 76 and 79 degrees west longitude. It is one hundred and forty miles in length, and in the middle about sixty in breadth, growing less towards each end. It is about twenty leagues east of Hispaniola, and as many south of Cuba, and is upwards of one hundred and fifty leagues to the northward of Porto-bello and Carthagena. The whole island is one continued ridge of hills, which run from east to west through the middle of it, and are generally called the Blue

Mountains; on each side there are other hills much lower. The mountainous part is very steep, and furrowed on the north and south sides by very deep channels, formed by the rains, which almost continually fall on these mountains. All the high lands are covered with woods, but from the thinness of the soil, they are often obliged to shoot their fibrous roots into the crannies of the rocks. Most of the savannahs, or plains fit for pasture and cleared of wood, lie near the south side of the island, where a person may ride many miles without meeting with the least ascent; in the interior some of these plains are encircled with hills.

The chief ports in the island are, Port-royal, which is a fine capacious harbour; Old-harbour, which lies seven or eight miles west of St. Jago; Port-morant, at the east end, and Point-negril, at the west end of the island; besides which there are several others on the north and south sides. But it is dangerous to approach the coast without a pilot, on account of the coral rocks with which it is almost surrounded.

There are near one hundred rivers in Jamaica, none of which are navigable; for rising in the mountains in the middle part of the island, they precipitate themselves down the rocks to the north and south, frequently carrying with them large trees, and pieces of rocks, and some of the cataracts among the mountains rise to the height of fifty or sixty feet: yet in dry seasons water is so very scarce in the savannahs distant from rivers, that many cattle die in driving to it. Some of these rivers are, in parts, subterranean, and one in particular, the Rio d'Oro, appears and disappears two or three times. Some of the springs and rivers petrify

their channels and stop their course, by a cement which unites the gravel and sand in their bottoms. There are several hot springs, and also many salt springs which form salt lagunas, or great ponds, particularly Riottoa-pond, which receives a great deal of water by a river, and yet has no visible manner of emptying itself: in these, and other ponds formed by the sea-water, great plenty of salt is made by the heat of the sun exhaling the moisture.

This island, being seven degrees within the tropic, has the trade-wind continually there, which blows on the south side of the island, and is called the sea-breeze. It begins about eight o'clock in the morning, and increases till twelve in the day, and then as the sun declines in the horizon, it decreases, and entirely ceases at four in the afternoon. The land-breeze begins at eight in the evening, blowing about four leagues into the sea: it continues increasing till twelve at night, and decreases again till four. Thus as the land-wind blows at night, and the sea-breeze in the day time, no ships can come into port except in the day, nor go out but at break of day, or very soon after.

This island is so very subject to earthquakes, that the inhabitants live in constant dread of them; some of these have been extremely dreadful, particularly in the year 1692, when the town of Port-royal was almost swallowed up. Thunder is heard almost every day in the mountains, accompanied with rain; frost or snow, however, are never seen in this warm climate, but the hail-stones are sometimes very large.

The dews are here so great, that in a morning the water drops from the leaves of the trees, as if

it had rained, and will soon penetrate through a man's clothes in the night; but there are seldom any fogs in the plains or sandy places near the sea. The rains are violent, and the drops very large. Generally speaking, the greatest rains are in May and October, when they begin at the new or full moon, and continue day and night for a fortnight, so that, sir Hans Sloane observes, all the level places are laid some inches under water. In the month of January rain is also expected, but this is neither so violent nor so constant as the other two.

As to the produce of this island, it has all the tropical fruits, as plantanes, cocoas, pine-apples, cacao or the chocolate-nut, pimento, cotton-trees, woods for dying, mahogany, and manchineel-wood, ginger, and several medicinal drugs and gums.

As this island produces more of the cacao, or chocolate-nut, than any of our plantations, we shall here give a particular description of it. The cacao-nuts grow on a tree, in green, red and yellow pods, every pod having in it three, four or five, kernels, about the bigness and shape of chesnuts, which are separated from each other by a substance, like the pulp of a roasted apple, moderately sharp and sweet, from which these kernels or nuts are taken when ripe, and cured by drying. The trunk of a cacao-tree is commonly four inches in diameter, five feet in height, and twelve to the top of the tree. These trees are very different, for some shoot up in two or three bodies, and others only in one; their leaves, unless in young trees, are many of them dead, and most of them discoloured; a tree in bearing generally yields from two to eight pounds of nuts in a year, growing out of the body or great limbs and boughs; and at the same place there are

blossoms, and both young and ripe fruit. These trees are always planted in the shade; some under plantane-trees, and some in the woods. The nuts are cured by being cut down when ripe, and laid to sweat three or four days in the pods, which is done by throwing them on heaps; after this the pods are cut, the nuts taken out, and put into a trough covered with plantane leaves, where they sweat again about sixteen or twenty days; they are then placed in the sun for three or four weeks, and assume a dark reddish colour.

Pimento is another of the natural productions of Jamaica, from whence it is called Jamaica-pepper, that being the place where it is principally found. The pimento tree is generally very tall and spreading, with a trunk as thick as a man's thigh: it rises straight above thirty feet, and is covered with an extraordinary smooth bark, of a grey colour; it then spreads into branches, which have leaves resembling those of a bay-tree, and, when bruised, are very odoriferous. The ends of the twigs branch into bunches of flowers, which falling off, are succeeded by bunches of berries, crowned with four small leaves: these berries are at first small and greenish, but when ripe they are larger than juniper-berries; they are then black, smooth and shining, and contain a small green aromatic pulp, with two large seeds, separated by a membrane.

This tree grows on all the hilly parts of the island of Jamaica, but chiefly on the north side; it is seldom felled, on account of the great profit arising from the fruit, which is annually exported in great quantities into Europe. The pimento-tree flowers in June, July and August, sooner or later according to the situation or difference in the season; after it

flowers, the fruit soon ripens, but in clear open grounds it is sooner ripe than in thick woods.

There is no great difficulty in curing or preserving this fruit: this is for the most part done by the Negroes, who mount the trees, and pull off the twigs with the unripe green fruit; after which, they separate the fruit from the twigs and leaves, and expose it to the sun for a number of days, from its rising to its setting, spreading the berries thinly on cloths, turning them frequently, and carefully avoiding the dews. By this means they become a little wrinkled, and from green, change to a brown colour, when they are fit for the market. They are of different sizes, but commonly of the bigness of black pepper, and resembling, in smell and taste, a mixture of spices, from whence it is called all-spice. The more fragrant and smaller they are, the better they are accounted. Sir Hans Sloane, speaking of the pimento-fruit, observes, that it is deservedly reckoned the best, most temperate, mild and innocent, of all spices.

The wild cinnamon, or more properly canella-alba tree, also grows in this island. Its trunk is about the thickness of that of the pimento-tree, and rises to the height of twenty or thirty feet, having many twigs and branches hanging downwards, and forming a beautiful appearance at the top. The bark consists of two parts; the outward bark is as thin as a shilling, of a whitish, ash, or grey colour, with some white spots scattered upon it, and several shallow furrows, of a darker colour, running variously through it: this bark is of an aromatic taste. The inward bark is as thick as a crown piece, smooth, and of a whiter colour than the outward; it has a much more pungent and aro-

matic flavour, somewhat like that of cloves. The leaves shoot out at the end of the twigs without any order, standing on foot-stalks, each of them two inches in length, and one in breadth; they are of a yellowish green colour, and are smooth and shining, without any incisures about their edges. The ends of the twigs are branched into bunches of scarlet or purple flowers, which, falling off, are succeeded by clusters of rough green berries, of the size of a large pea, that contain a pale green thin pulp, and four black shining seeds of an irregular figure.

All the parts of this tree, when fresh, are very hot and aromatic; but the inward bark of the tree is what is chiefly used both in the English plantations in the West Indies and in Europe; it is easily cured, by only cutting off the bark, and letting it dry in the shade. The middling sort of people in the West Indies prefer it to all other spices; it being thought very good to consume the immoderate humidity of the stomach, to help digestion, and expel wind. Rum loses its disagreeable smell, if mixed with this bark. The tree grows in the savannah-woods, and is found on each side of the road between Passage-fort and the town of St. Jago de la Vega.

As great quantities of indigo have been produced in Jamaica, we shall here give a particular account of the manner in which it is cultivated and prepared. It thrives best in sandy ground. The seed, from which it is raised, is yellow, round, and somewhat less than a tare. The soil is first made light by hoeing; trenches are then dug, like those our gardeners prepare for pease, into which the seed is put about March; it grows ripe in eight weeks time, and in fresh broken ground will spring up

about three feet high, but in other ground to no more than eighteen inches. The stalk is full of leaves of a deep green colour, and will, from the first sowing, yield many crops in one year. When ripe it is cut, and steeped in vats twenty-four hours, after which it is cleared from the first water and put into proper cisterns, where, when it has been carefully beaten, it settles in about eighteen hours. In these cisterns are several taps, which let the clear water run out, and the thick is put into bags, about three feet long, made commonly of osnabrugs, which being hung up, all the liquid parts drop away, and when well drained it is put into wooden boxes about three feet long, fourteen inches wide, and one and a half deep; these boxes are placed in the sun until the indigo is very hot, and, when the extreme heat is over, is repeated until it is sufficiently dried.

In land that proves proper for indigo, the labour of one hand will, in a year's time, produce between eighty and a hundred weight, if no accidents happen; for indigo, as well as other West India produce, is liable to many; the most common are blasting and worms, by which it is frequently destroyed.

There is plenty of cotton in Jamaica, which is finer than that of the Caribbee-islands. There are, besides, three sorts of bark used by tanners, who can tan better here than in England, and in six weeks the leather is ready to work into shoes. The island abounds with fustic, red-wood, log-wood and other woods fit for dyers; also drugs and medicinal herbs, as guaiacum, china-root, sarsaparilla, cassia, tamarinds, vanelloes, &c. But the sugar-cane is the chief glory of Jamaica, for by this the inhabitants have acquired immense riches.

As to the population, various computations have been made; but, according to the best accounts, there are 100,000 white people, and four times as many Negroes. Their food consists of provisions similar to those of England, turtle, bread of Indian corn, yams and cassivi-root; the water is unwholesome near the sea-coasts, and has destroyed great numbers of seamen at Port-royal. Fevers and fluxes are very prevalent.

CHAP. XVIII.

The manner in which Carolina was settled by the English. Its climate, soil and produce. The manner of preparing turpentine, resin, tar and pitch. The nature of their exports.

CAROLINA is a part of that extensive country in North-America, which was formerly comprehended under the name of Florida. It was first discovered by Sebastian Cabot, and afterwards received the name of Florida from Juan Ponce de Leon.

The Spaniards endeavoured several times to make settlements in this country; but, after many unfortunate and expensive expeditions, being entirely discouraged, abandoned it for several years. At length the French, perceiving that this large tract of land was neglected by the Spaniards, admiral Coligny sent John Ribaut, who formed a settlement here in the reign of Charles IX. and having built a fort, called it Charles-fort, giving the name of Port-royal to the harbour.

The civil war raging in France, Ribaut's soldiers mutinied for want of supplies; for, though the natives were very kind to them, out of hatred to the Spaniards, they could not furnish them with

many of the necessaries they wanted. Ribaut, therefore, after having made some discoveries in the east part of Florida, returned to France; but in his passage the men were reduced to such extremity, that they killed and eat one of the crew, and would, probably, have done so to others, had they not, providentially, met with an English ship, which supplied them with some provisions. Two years after a peace being concluded in France between the catholics and protestants, admiral Coligny procured more ships to be sent; and soon after Ribaut followed with fresh supplies of men and provisions.

The French now began to conceive great hopes of this plantation, when a squadron of Spanish ships drove the French out of the fort, killed Ribaut and 600 men, and obliged the remainder to return to France. The Spaniards, however, so oppressed the Indians, that they only waited for an opportunity to be revenged, which soon after occurred. Captain de Gorgues, a French gentleman, at his own expence, fitted out three stout ships, and sailing to Carolina with 280 men, was assisted by the natives, when having taken fort Charles, he put all the Spaniards found therein to the sword. They had built two other forts, which he easily reduced, whose garrisons met with a similar fate, and then he demolished the fortifications. It does not appear that de Gorgues made any settlement here, or that the Spaniards endeavoured to recover the country; for from the year 1567 it remained deserted by all the European nations, until the reign of Charles II. king of England.

In 1622, several English families, flying from the massacres committed by the Indians in Virginia and New England, were driven upon these coasts, and

settled in the province of Malica, near the head of the river May, where they became a kind of missionaries among the Malicans and Apalachites.

Such was the situation of this province, when, after it had been abandoned by the French for near 100 years, king Charles II. made a grant of it, in 1663, to Edward earl of Clarendon, lord high chancellor of England, George duke of Albemarle, William lord Craven, Anthony lord Ashly, sir George Carteret, sir William Berkley, and sir John Colliton; from the north end of Luck-island, within 36 degrees of north latitude, to the river San Matthio, which borders on the coast of Florida, and is within 31 degrees of north latitude, and to the westward as far as the South Seas.

These proprietors afterwards obtained another grant, which somewhat varied the boundary of the province, by fixing its northern frontier at Carotoch-river, in 36° 36′ north latitude, and its southern frontier in 29 degrees; within which bounds both the Carolinas, and the province of Georgia, were included.

The plan of government for this colony was framed by that great statesman, Anthony earl of Shaftsbury, and digested into form by the justly celebrated Mr. John Locke; but after it had been in the possession of the proprietors, or their heirs, for about 60 years, seven of them sold their shares to the crown for £15,500, each proprietor, who had a whole share, having £2500; and the quit-rents, and other incomes due to these proprietors, amounting to about £9000, they also sold to the crown for £5000. This surrender was confirmed by act of parliament, in the year 1728, when the remaining one-eighth of the property, in the pos-

session of lord Carteret, was confirmed to him and his heirs.

This province is seated between the extremes of heat and cold; but the heat is more troublesome in summer than the cold in winter; this last season being very short, and frosty mornings frequently succeeded by warm days. The air is for the most part serene and clear, both in summer and winter; yet the inhabitants have their winter rains, and sometimes very heavy showers about midsummer, especially if the wind changes suddenly from the south-east to the north-west, when it blows exceeding cold, and brings distempers on those who do not take care to guard against it. To those who live regularly, and use any precaution, the country is generally healthful: but persons, who after a hot day expose themselves to the cold breezes of the evening, usually feel their effects; as do those who indulge themselves in eating great quantities of fruit, and drinking pernicious liquors to excess. The country is subject to hurricanes, as well as the Caribbee-islands, but they do not happen every year.

This province is now divided into North and South Carolina, and the country known by the name of Georgia, was within the original limits of this colony; but at present we shall only concern ourselves with the two first-mentioned provinces, and shall treat of the last in its proper place.

North Carolina is bounded by Virginia on the north; by the ocean on the east; by a line drawn, in 34 degrees, from the ocean to the mountains, on the south; and by that part of Florida possessed by the Indians, on the west; and is subdivided into fourteen townships or parishes.

South Carolina is divided from North Carolina

by the above imaginary line, on the north; by the ocean on the east; by the river Savannah, which separates it from Georgia, on the south; and by the country of the Indians, on the west; being divided into fourteen parishes or townships. But the chief, and almost the only town in both Carolinas, is Charles-town, situated in 32° 45′ north latitude, on the point of the peninsula formed by Ashley and Cooper rivers; the former of which is navigable for ships twenty miles above the town, and for boats and large canoes near forty miles further; the other river is not navigable for ships so far, but for boats much further. The houses are generally well built of brick or timber, and formed into regular and spacious streets.

The town of Beaufort is situated on the island of Port Royal, in 31° 46′ north latitude, and 100 miles south of Charles-town; the island and continent forming a fine capacious harbour, capable of containing the whole royal navy of England. This island consists of near 1000 acres, and is navigable all round for boats and pettiaugers, or great canoes, and one half of it for shipping, where large vessels may load and unload from the shore. This town is small, though, from its advantageous situation, it will probably be the capital of Carolina. There is another port town erected at Wingaw, about 50 miles to the northward of Charles-town, to which they have given the name of George Town.

As to the produce of the country, all sorts of trees and plants will grow there, as well as can be wished, particularly citron trees; white mulberry trees, for feeding of silk worms; orange trees, olives, vines, rice, wheat, barley, oats, beans, peas, hemp, flax, cotton, tobacco and indigo. The lands

are not difficult to clear, because there are neither stones nor brambles, but only large trees, which do not grow very thick; so that more land could be cleared there in one week, than in Europe in a month. It is customary to cut down these great trees, and to leave the stumps four or five years to rot, after which they root them up, in order to manure the land. The ground is indeed sandy; but this sand is impregnated with a salt or nitre, which renders it very fruitful; so that there are a great number of plantations, that have been constantly cultivated for seventy years, which continue to produce great crops, without ever being manured, for they never lay any dung on the ground.

Silk worms, in Carolina, are hatched from the egg about the middle of March; at the same time that the mulberry leaves, which are their food, begin to open; being attended and fed six weeks, they eat no more, but have small bushes set up for them, to spin themselves into balls, that are thrown into warm water, and wound off into raw silk.

Turpentine, resin, tar and pitch, are produced from a sort of pine-tree. Turpentine, by cutting in the standing green trees, several channels, that meet at the foot of the tree, where a receiver is placed. These channels are cut as high as a person can reach with an ax, and the bark is peeled off from all those parts of the trunk that are exposed to the sun, that its heat may the more easily force out the turpentine, which flows into the receiver. This turpentine, being boiled in kettles, becomes resin.

Tar is made by preparing a circular floor of clay, declining towards the centre, from which is laid

sloping a wooden pipe, which reaches about ten feet without the circumference. Under the end, the earth is dug away, and barrels placed to receive the tar as it runs. Upon the floor is built a pile of dry pine-wood, split in pieces, and surrounded with a wall of earth, which covers it all over, except a little at the top, where the fire is first kindled; after the fire begins to burn they also cover the top, to prevent flame, and only a sufficient heat to force the tar downwards into the pipe in the center of the floor. This heat they temper as they please, by thrusting a stick through the earth, and letting in the air at as many places as they think proper. Pitch is made by boiling tar in large iron kettles set in furnaces, or by burning it in round clay holes made in the earth.

Black cattle have greatly increased since the first settling this colony. The cows graze in the forest, and the calves being separated, and kept in pastures fenced in, they return home at night to suckle them. Here are also abundance of hogs, that go daily to feed in the woods, on nuts and roots, but having a shelter at home, and something given them to eat, generally return in the evening. The beef and pork produced here, find a good market in the sugar-islands.

The trade of Carolina is so very considerable, that above 200 ships annually sail from thence, laden with merchandise of the growth of the country; and it appeared from the custom-house entries, at Charles-town, so long ago as from March 1730 to March 1731, that they exported in that year, 41,957 barrels of rice, about 500 pounds weight per barrel; 19,750 barrels of pitch; 2,063 of tar; and 759 of turpentine; 300 casks of deer-skins,

containing 8 or 900 each; besides a vast quantity of Indian corn, pease and beans, beef, pork, and other salted flesh; plank and timber for building, as oak, walnut, pine, cedar and cypress; and they now export great quantities of indigo.

They carry on a great trade with the Indians, from whom they procure vast quantities of skins; in exchange for which, they give them powder and shot, coarse cloth, vermillion, iron, strong liquors, and some other goods, by which they have a very considerable profit; and to assist them in cultivating the ground they have above 40,000 Negroes.

CHAP. XIX.

The settlement of New York. A description of that province, and the trade of its inhabitants.

THE next colony in America settled by the English, was that of New York, to which they had a double right, that of discovery and conquest. The coast was first viewed by Sebastian Cabot, and, in the reign of queen Elizabeth, the country was considered as part of the province of Virginia. Afterwards, in the year 1608, Hudson, the famous navigator, discovered the river that has since borne his name, and the adjacent country, which he afterwards, without any legal authority, sold to the Dutch, who settled there. At length, some English dissenters, who, for the sake of religious toleration, fled to Holland, hearing the Dutch give an inviting description of the river, climate, and soil of this country, embarked in order to sail thither; but the master of the ship being bribed by the Dutch, obliged them to land farther to the

northward, where they became the first planters of New England.

Two or three years before this, sir Samuel Argall had destroyed the Dutch plantations; when, to prevent the like for the future, they applied to king James for his licence to stay there, to build cottages, and to plant, for traffic as well as subsistence, pretending that it was only for the convenience of their ships touching there for water and provisions, in their voyage to Brasil; but by degrees they extended their limits, built towns, fortified them, became a flourishing colony, and called the country Nova Belgia.

The Dutch colonies were in this thriving condition, at the opening of the first Dutch war, in the reign of king Charles II. when they were attacked by the English, in 1644, under sir Robert Carr, who was sent to take possession of this plantation. He took with him between two or three thousand men, and offering protection to such of the inhabitants as submitted, became master of the whole country without a blow. After which his majesty gave leave to such of the inhabitants as were inclined, to stay, and suffered the rest to depart with their effects. The number of the latter was very inconsiderable in comparison of the former. Colonel Nichols was left governor of the province, and continued so twenty years; in which time he not only brought the people to relish, but to be enamoured with the English government; so that there was not the least disturbance among the inhabitants, on account of their being subject to England.

The duke of York made a grant of part of this province; but the remainder, which is now stiled New York, continued a royal government till the

American revolution. This province is bounded by Canada on the north, by New England on the east, by the ocean on the south, and by the five Indian nations and Pensylvania on the west. It extends above two hundred miles in length, from north to south, but is scarcely sixty miles broad in any part. To this must be added the island of Manahattan, upon which the city of New York is built; Staten-island and Long-island, all which lie before the mouth of Hudson's-river, and are comprehended in New York proper.

This province is divided into ten counties, which, proceeding from north to south down Hudson's-river, lie in the following order: Albany, Ulster, Duchess, Orange, King's county, Chester, New York county, Queen's county, Suffolk county, and Richmond county, which abound in farms, but have not many great towns; the principal are New York city, Schenectida, Albany and West Chester.

New York city is situated in 40° 46′ north latitude, and 47° 4′ west longitude, at the south end of York county, in an island at the mouth of Hudson's-river, about fourteen miles long, and three broad. As this city stands on an eminence, and contains numerous houses built with brick and stone, and has a wall and forts that serve as well for ornament as defence, there is scarcely any town in North America that makes a better appearance. The public buildings are the several churches belonging to those of the church of England, to the Swedes of the Lutheran persuasion, to the Dutch Calvinists, the French refugees, and the English dissenters; the town-house, and the edifice where their general assemblies and courts of justice are held. This city has likewise an excellent harbour,

furnished with commodious quays and warehouses, and employs some hundreds of vessels in its foreign trade and fisheries.

As New York may be considered the frontier garrison in the south against an invasion from any maritime power, so Schenectida town and fort, in the county of Albany, twenty miles north of the town of Albany, may be deemed the frontier on the north against Canada and the Indians. Albany is a considerable town in Hudson's-river, a hundred and fifty miles north of New York city, and has a fort erected for its defence.

South-west of New York lies Staten-island, which is about ten miles in length, six in breadth, and has a great many good farms and plantations.

Long-island lies east of Staten-island, and south-east of New York, opposite to Connecticut. It is a hundred and fifty miles in length, and generally about twelve in breadth, containing three of the counties above-mentioned, viz. Queen's county, Suffolk county and Richmond county. The chief towns in Queen's county are Jamaica and Hempstead; in Suffolk county the chief town is Oyster-bay; and in the last there is not only the town of Richmond, which gives its name to that county, but Southampton, North-castle and New Windsor.

In Long-island there is a celebrated plain, sixteen miles long and four broad, to which they have given the name of Salisbury-plain, from its having as fine a turf as the plain of that name in England. As there is an excellent breed of horses in the island, they have races here every season, to which the people of New England and New York resort. There are other good towns in the county of West Chester on the continent, east of the mouth of Hud-

son's-river, the chief of which are West Chester and Rye.

The trade from New York to the sugar islands is very considerable, and consists in corn, flour, beef, pork, pease, bacon, smoked-beef, apples, onions, boards and pipe-staves, for which they receive in return sugar, molasses, rum, ginger, coffee, &c. They have also a very advantageous trade with Madeira and the Azores, in pipe-staves and fish, for which they load their ships back with wine and brandy. It is affirmed, that the winters being severe in this country, the inhabitants consume more of the woollen manufactures of England than all the islands put together, Jamaica excepted.

CHAP. XX.

The settlement of the East and West Jerseys. Their produce and trade.

THE countries, now called the Jerseys, fell under the dominion of the crown of Great Britain by the conquest of Nova Belgia, or New York, of which they formed a part. The several voyages, that had been made for the planting of Virginia, rendered these coasts very well known to multitudes of English seamen, who being dispersed in different parts of the world, carried an account of the fertility of these countries wherever they went; and this inspired strangers with a strong desire of possessing what the English seemed to neglect.

The first Europeans who settled here, were the Swedes, who had three towns in this province, Christina, called by the Indians Andastaka, Elsinbourgh, and Gottenbourgh. Their settlements were

chiefly on the south side of the river towards Pensylvania, opposite to which there is a place still called Fort-Elsinbourgh. The Swedes, however, made but little progress in their plantation; while the Dutch, being always industrious in promoting their own advantage, worked them so far out of it, that Bergen, the northern part of New Jersey, was almost entirely new planted by Hollanders. At length king Charles II. gave this tract in his grant of Nova Belgia to the duke of York; but the English made no settlement in it until several years after they were in the possession of that province, and had greatly extended their plantations.

The duke of York having invested this province, under the name of Nova Caneria, in John lord Berkeley and sir George Carteret, they, or their assignees, agreed to divide it into two parts; when East Jersey, which borders on New-York, falling to sir George, whose family was of the isle of Jersey, this province took its name from thence; and West New Jersey, which borders on Pensylvania, falling to the lord Berkeley, it was agreed to give the name of that island to the whole.

This entire province, containing the two Jerseys, has the main ocean on the south and east; the river Delawar, which separates it from Pensylvania, on the west; and Hudson's river on the north. It lies between 39 and 40 degrees north latitude, and extends in length above 120 miles, and 60 in breadth from north to south. The largest and best inhabited part of this province, is East-Jersey, which extends from Little-egg harbour to that part of Hudson's river, which is in 41 degrees north latitude, and to the southward and westward was divided from West-Jersey, by a line of partition, that

extends in length from Egg harbour to the south branch of Raritan river, and contains Bergen county, Essex county, and Middlesex, on the north side of the last mentioned river, and Monmouth county on the south. West Jersey contains the same number of counties, and these are Burlington, Gloucester, Salem, and Cape May.

The chief towns in the Jerseys are, first, Perth Amboy, the capital of the county of Middlesex, pleasantly situated at the mouth of Raritan river, which, had it been built according to the intended model, would have been one of the finest towns in North America; but planters have not resorted to it, as was expected, though it is so commodiously situated for trade, that ships of 300 tons may come up in one tide, and lie before the merchant's doors; but Elizabeth's town, which is the capital of the county of Essex, and is situated to the north, flourishes much more, and may still be deemed the most considerable town in the Jerseys. The other principal towns are Bergen, the capital of the county of the same name; Middleton, Shrewsbury, and Freehold, in the county of Monmouth; Burlington or Bridlington, the capital of the county of Burlington, and of West Jersey. This last town is situated on an island, in the middle of the river Delawar, to the northward of Philadelphia in Pensylvania, but on the opposite side of the river. The houses are handsomely built of brick, and laid out into spacious streets, with commodious quays and wharfs, to which ships of two or three hundred tons may come up. The easy communication this town possesses, with Philadelphia and the ocean, by means of the river Salem, which falls into Delawar bay, renders it one of the best towns in West Jersey,

whether we consider its situation, buildings or trade.

The soil and conveniences of rivers and creeks are much the same in both Jerseys, except that West-Jersey abounds more in the latter, from its situation on Delawar river. The country produces abundance of all sorts of grain; and the inhabitants, besides carrying provisions to the sugar islands, drive a trade in furs and skins. They also export train-oil, iron, copper, black cattle, fish, corn, and other provisions.

CHAP. XXI.

The various settlements and revolutions in the Lucayan or Bahama islands.

WE now come to the settlement of the Lucayan or Bahama islands, the first parts of the new world discovered by Columbus, who arrived first at Guanahani, to which he gave the name of St. Salvador, but the English changed it to that of Cat-island. As these islands lie rather out of the usual course of ships bound to the continent of America, it was long before the English had any notice of them: but, in 1667, captain William Sayle being bound to Carolina, was forced by a storm among them, and had an opportunity of examining them carefully, particularly a large island, to which he gave his own name. But being a second time driven upon it, when bound to the continent, he gave it the name of Providence. After his return to England, he acquainted the proprietors of Carolina with the situation and circumstances of these islands; observing, that, in case they were settled, they

might not only be of great benefit to England, but be a constant check on the French and Spaniards, in case of a breach with either or both of those nations. These reasons being suggested to king Charles II. his majesty made a grant of the Bahama islands to George duke of Albemarle, Anthony lord Ashley, John lord Berkeley, William lord Craven, sir George Carteret, and sir Peter Colliton.

The Bahama islands are situated to the north of Cuba, and stretch to the north-east from the south-west, between 21 and 27 degrees of north latitude, and between 73 and 81 degrees of west longitude. The island of Bahama, which communicates its name to the rest, is seated in the latitude of 26° 36′, at the distance of about twenty leagues from the continent of Florida. It is about fifty miles in length, but scarce any where sixty miles in breadth, and in many places not half so broad. It is, however, very pleasant and fruitful; the soil is remarkably rich, and the country every where abounds with brooks, and springs of fresh water.

Providence Island lies in the centre of some hundreds of islands, some of them many miles in length, and others no bigger than small rocks rising above the water; so that it is extremely dangerous for ships to be forced in among them. This island lies in 25 degrees north latitude, is twenty-eight miles long, and eleven miles broad, at the greatest breadth. The most considerable profits of the first planters of Providence island, arose from the misfortunes of such as were shipwrecked; or from those who, in a winter voyage to the continent of America, were driven to the Bahama islands, and put into Providence for provisions.

The first governor that was sent to Providence

island by the proprietors, was Mr. Chillingworth, who went there about the year 1672, when several people sailed from England, and the other colonies, to settle there; but living a licentious life, they grew impatient of restraint, and Mr. Chillingworth endeavouring to reduce them to settled habits, they assembled tumultuously, seized him, and shipped him off for Jamaica; after which they lived as they thought proper.

Though such an unruly colony afforded but little encouragement for any man to put himself into their hands, yet six or seven years after, the proprietors made Mr. Clarke governor. His fate was much worse than that of his predecessor; for the Spaniards, being then jealous of every new English colony towards the south, landed in Providence, destroyed all the stock which the inhabitants could not carry off, burned their houses, obliged them to remove to other colonies, and killed Mr. Clarke. The island remained uninhabited till about the time of the revolution, when several persons removed thither from England and the continent of America, and a new governor was appointed.

About ten years after, there were in Providence, and the adjacent islands, near 1000 inhabitants; some tobacco was planted, a sugar-mill set up, and other improvements made; but, in 1708, the Spaniards and French landed, surprised the fort, took the governor prisoner, plundered the settlers, burned the town of Nassau, ruined the fort, and spiked the guns. After which they carried off the governor, and about half the blacks, the rest saving themselves in the woods; but, in about a month after, they returned, and took most of the negroes that were left. After this second invasion, the English inha-

bitants of the Bahamas thought it in vain to stay any longer; and therefore removed, some to Carolina, some to Virginia, and some to New England, and other parts of America.

The Bahama islands at length becoming a receptacle for pirates, and the English considering that it would be of fatal consequence if they fell into the hands of an enemy, the house of lords addressed her majesty queen Anne, that the island of Providence might be put in a posture of defence. This advice being neglected, their lordships, four years after, addressed his majesty king George I.; who gave directions for dislodging the pirates, for making settlements, and erecting fortifications.

Captain Woodes Rogers was now appointed governor, and sailed for Providence in April 1718, with a naval force for subduing the pirates. In the mean time colonel Bennett, governor of Bermuda, sent a sloop to the island, ordering them to surrender. Those who were then on the island, gladly accepted the favourable terms that were offered them, and promised to surrender, as soon as they could get a passage to the English colonies; adding, that they did not doubt but their companions, who were at sea, would gladly follow their example. Accordingly captain Henry Jennings, and fifteen others, immediately followed the sloop to Bermudas, and surrendered; and captain Lassie, captain Nicholls, captain Hernigold, and captain Burgess, surrendered soon after, and 114 of their men. But Vane, one of the captains of the pirates, set fire to a French ship of 22 guns, which he had captured, in order to burn the Rose frigate, which arrived at Nassau: however, that frigate escaped, by cutting her cables. The Milford man of war,

and another, on board of which was the governor, then standing in for the harbour, Vane, and about fifty of his men, escaped in a sloop.

Mr. Woodes Rogers landed on rhe 27th of July, when he took possession of the fort, and caused his majesty's commission to be read in the presence of the officers, soldiers, and about three hundred persons, whom he found there at his arrival; they had been almost daily exercised in arms for their defence, in case of an attack from the Spaniards or French, and captain Rogers brought with him above a hundred soldiers, who being added to the others, were sufficient to secure the Bahama islands.

Mr. Rogers began to regulate the government, and reduce it to order. He nominated six of the adventurers who came with him to be of the council, to whom he added six more out of such of the inhabitants as had never been pirates. After the board had been appointed, about two hundred of the pirates surrendered themselves, and took the oath of allegiance, as did voluntarily the greatest part of the inhabitants of Providence, who, a few years after, were computed at fifteen hundred persons; out of these were formed three companies of militia under officers of their own island. These companies took their turn every night in the town-guard at Nassau. The independent company was always on duty in the fort, and a battery of eight guns was erected at the eastern entrance of the harbour.

By these methods the face of affairs in this part of the world was entirely changed. The town of Nassau was rebuilt, a regular force established, and plantations laid out. Soon after the neighbouring island of Eleuthera was also settled; about sixty

families fixing themselves there, erected a small fort for their defence. The same was done in Harbour-island, where the plantation soon grew more considerable, and a large fort was built for the protection of the inhabitants.

Mr. Rogers returning to England, was succeeded in the government by captain Fitz-Williams; and, since the last settlement of these islands, they have been gradually improving.

CHAP. XXII.

The settlements of the Hudson's-bay company. Religion, manners and customs of the Indians; the plants and animals, particularly the beaver.

THE next corporation formed by the English for enlarging their commerce, was the Hudson's-bay company, erected by king Charles II. on the following occasion: Messrs. Radison and Gooselier, two Frenchmen, were informed by the Canadian Indians, that they might go by land to the bottom of the bay, where the English had never yet been; whereupon they desired them to conduct them there, which the Indians did, and returning to the Upper Lake the way they came, and thence to Quebec, the capital of Canada, they offered the principal merchants there to conduct ships to Hudson's-bay; but their project was rejected. They returned to France, in hopes of a more favourable reception at court; but, after presenting several memorials, and spending much time and money, their project was considered as chimerical, and they were answered in the same manner as at Quebec. However, the English ambassador at Paris hearing

of their proposals, imagined he should do a piece of service to his country, by engaging them in the service of the English, who had already pretensions to the bay; he therefore persuaded them to go to London, where they met with a favourable reception from some persons of quality, merchants and others, who employed Mr. Gillam, a person experienced in the New England trade, to perfect this discovery.

He sailed in the Nonsuch ketch in the year 1677, up Baffin's-bay to the height of 75 degrees, and thence southward to 51 degrees, where he entered a river, to which he gave the name of Prince Rupert's-river, and finding the natives disposed to a friendly commerce, he erected a small fortress, which he stiled Charles-fort. The success of this expedition was so remarkable, that, on the return of Mr. Gillam, the persons concerned in fitting out this vessel applied to king Charles II. for a patent, who granted them one dated the 2d of May, 1760.

Hudson's-bay is situated from 51 to 64 degrees north latitude, and is six hundred miles in length; and the mouth of the straits, which is six leagues over, lies in about 61 degrees north latitude. The two opposite shores are called, the East-main and West-main; the former is also termed Labrador, and the latter New South Wales.

The company erected their first fort on Rupert's-river, but never had any towns there; they live within their forts in little houses and huts, in which the builders consider nothing but how to defend themselves from the cold and rain; they are not, however, so much disturbed by the latter as by the former. In 1670, another factory was established at Fort Nelson. Meanwhile the company, by their

governors and agents, made such contracts with the Indian captains or kings, for enjoying an exclusive trade, that they could not pretend they had encroached upon them. These contracts were as binding as the Indians could make them, and were confirmed by such ceremonies as they thought most sacred and obligatory.

In the year 1686, the company were in possession of five settlements, viz. Albany-river, Haye's-island, Rupert's-river, Fort Nelson and New Severn; and their trade at each of them was very considerable. From Albany-river they had generally three thousand five hundred beavers a year; and their commerce increased so much, that the French began to be afraid that all the Upland Indians would be drawn down to the bay. But being sensible of the pusillanimity of James II. king of England, they resolved to drive the English out of all their possessions at the bottom of the bay. First they took Haye's-island, and then the fort on Rupert's-river; after which, the French company at Canada procured a detachment of soldiers to be sent under the chevalier de Troyes, who marched over land from Quebec, and, in a time of profound peace, laid siege to the fort at Albany-river; but though the governor did all in his power to defend the place, he was obliged to surrender it in a week's time. However, about seven years after, the company, assisted by the government, retook all the forts and factories of which the French had before deprived them; and these in return drove them out again.

In 1696, the company applied themselves to king William, representing their inability to maintain themselves against the French, and praying the

assistance of the crown; upon which, two men of war were sent, under the command of captain Allen, who, coming into Haye's-river, summoned all the forts to surrender. The French governor, finding himself unable to defend them against the English, capitulated, and they were allowed to march out with all military honours. However, in the next war, the French renewed their attacks upon the settlements of the Hudson's-bay company, with such success, that they left them only Fort Albany; but by the treaty of Utrecht, every thing was restored to the company again, and an equitable satisfaction made for their losses. Besides the above, they have York-fort, Churchill, and Moose-river factories.

As to the situation of the country about these forts: Moose-river factory is in latitude 51° 28′, and is built near the mouth of the river, which, at twelve miles distance from the fort, is divided into two branches; one comes from the southward, and the other from the south-west. On the southern branch all sorts of grain thrive, as barley, pease and beans do at the factory, though exposed to the chilling winds that blow from the bay. On the southern part, above the falls, there grow along the river wild-oats and rye, the husks of which are black, though the grain is perfectly clear and white, like rice: as it grows in the water, the Indians beat it off, when ripe, into their canoes, as they pass along the river. In the woods at the bottom of the bay, at Moose, Albany and Rupert rivers, are very large timber trees of all kinds, as oak, ash, &c. as well as pines, cedars and spruce. They have good grass for making hay, and all sorts of pulse, grain, and those fruit-trees natural

to the same climate in Europe, all thrive very well.

The ice breaks up at Moose factory in the beginning of April, but higher up in the country in March. The river is navigable for canoes a great way up among the falls, one of which is fifty feet in height; but beyond this the river is deep, and navigable for a great way, and the climate good. There is a great deal of small wood near the factory, but it improves farther up the river, where they have juniper, birch and poplar; and more southerly, the timber is still larger, and the variety greater.

Though the bottom of the bay is as near the line as London, it being in 51 degrees, yet the air is excessively cold for nine months in the year, and the other three months very hot. However, some fruits, as gooseberries, strawberries, and dewberries, grow about Rupert's-river, where the commodities for trade are guns, powder, shot, cloth, hatchets, kettles, tobacco, &c. which the English exchange with the Indians for furs, as beavers, martins, foxes, moose and other skins.

Mr. Dobbs observes, that "The company avoid all they can making discoveries to the northward of Churchill, or extending their trade that way, for fear they should discover a passage to the western ocean of America, and tempt, by that means, the rest of the English merchants to lay open their trade, which they know they have no legal right to; which, if the passage was found, would not only animate the rest of the merchants to pursue the trade through that passage, but also to find out the great advantages that might be made of the trade of the rivers and countries adjoining to the bay, by which means they would lose their beloved

monopoly. But the prospect they have of gain to be made, by trading with the Esquimaux Indians, for whale-fin, whale and seal oil, and sea-horse teeth, induces them to venture a sloop annually, as far as 62° 30′, to Whale-cove, where these Indians meet them, and truck their fins and oil with them."

The Indians of certain districts, bounded by particular rivers, have each of them what they call an okimah, or captain, who is an old man, esteemed only for his prudence and experience. His authority is only what they please to give him upon particular occasions. He is their orator when they address the English, and speaks for them in their own councils, when they assemble every spring, to settle their quarters for hunting, fowling and fishing. Their notions of religion are very confined. They maintain that there are two monetoes, or spirits, one who sends all the good things, and the other all the bad. Their worship consists in songs and dances at their feasts, in honour of the monetoes who have favoured them; but if they are sick, or much distressed for want of provisions, they hang some little bauble which they esteem, upon the top of a pole, near the tent, to pacify the offended spirit. As they lead a rambling life, they can receive no benefit from tame fowl or cattle, for they seldom stay above a fortnight at a place, unless they find plenty of game. On their resting they build their huts, and then disperse to procure game for their food, returning at night, after having killed enough to support them for a day. But in these excursions they do not proceed above a league or two from their huts. When they find a scarcity of game, they remove a league or two farther, and

thus traverse through these countries and bogs, scarcely missing one day in winter or summer, whether the weather is fair or foul, and going in the greatest storms of snow.

The smaller game, got by traps or snares, are generally the employment of women and children, as martins, squirrels, ermines, &c. while the elks, or moose-deer, stags, bears, tigers, wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, carcajous, &c. are the employment of the men. But when the Indians kill any game for food, they leave it upon the spot, and the next day send their wives to fetch it home; directing them to the place, by breaking off branches from the trees, and laying them in the road, pointing to the place where they should go, and sometimes they scatter moss, so that they never miss finding it. It is observable, that the trees all bend towards the south, and that the branches on that side are larger and stronger than those of the north side; and that this is also the case with respect to the moss that grows upon the trees.

When they go abroad in winter, to hunt and shoot for their daily food, before they dress, they rub themselves all over with bear's grease, or oil of beavers, which does not freeze. They also grease the fur of their beaver coats, and then put them on. They have a kind of boots or stockings, made of beaver's skin well oiled, with the fur inwards, and above them they have an oil-skin laced about their feet, which keeps out the cold and water, where there is neither ice nor snow; and by this means they never freeze or suffer by the cold. In summer, when they go naked, they also rub themselves with oil or grease, which keeping their skins soft and supple, prevents their being scorched by exposing

themselves to the sun, and hinders their being molested by the flies, bugs, mosketoes, or any other noxious insect. When they want to get rid of it, they go into the water, and rub themselves all over with mud or clay, then letting it dry upon them, they rub it off; but whenever they are free from the oil, the flies and mosketoes immediately attack them.

They use no milk from the time they are weaned, and have an aversion to cheese. They are very fond of brandy and rum, pruens and raisins, and all kinds of toys.

The martins, bears, rein-deer, buffaloes, wolves, and other beasts with rich furs, are very numerous, the country being mostly rocky, and covered with white moss; but there are no beavers to the northward of Churchill-river, on account of there being no ponds or woods, proper for those animals. The carcajous and otters prey upon the beavers, when they can take them at an advantage. The former is as big as a very large dog, and has a good fur, which in exchange is valued at a beaver and a half.

A large beaver, or castor, is about twenty-six inches long, from the hind part of the head to the root of the tail, and is about three feet eight inches round. Its head is about seven inches long and eight broad; and its tail, which is somewhat of an oval form, and covered with scales, is fourteen inches long and six broad. Its ears are short and round; its eyes are small, and it has two fore teeth in each jaw, about an inch long, which are extremely sharp and strong. Though its legs are but five inches long, its feet are above six inches in length, and its paws formed like a man's hand; but the toes of the hind feet are joined like those of a duck, with

a membrane of a slate-colour. It makes use of its paw in feeding, as apes do, and in building its house.

The ancient writers of natural history are mistaken in asserting, that the beavers bite off their testicles, when pursued by the huntsmen; for what the physicians call castoreum, is inguinal, and glands of this animal. Besides, the beavers are never pursued in hunting; for, as they seldom leave the side of the pond where they have built their habitations, on the least noise they dive under water, and return to their little houses when the danger is over.

The beavers are of three colours, some of a reddish brown, some black, and others white. Those of each pond, are represented by several authors, as forming a commonwealth, having an excellent polity and laws, and holding frequent consultations for their mutual defence. But, it is probable, these things are greatly exaggerated; however, their sagacity is universally allowed to be very extraordinary, and the manner of building their habitations has been always a subject of admiration to the curious.

The beavers, on finding a rivulet that runs across a low ground, make banks that stop the course of the water, and cause an inundation that is sometimes six miles in circumference. This bank is made with trees, which they cut down with their teeth, and then drag them along as they swim in the water. The trees being ranged along the bottom of the low ground, these animals load themselves with grass and earth, which they drag along on their great tails, and throw in between the timber with such art and dexterity, that it would be very difficult, if not impossible, for man to make a stronger wall with such materials. Their tails serve them both for carts

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

and trowels, and their teeth for axes; their paws supply the place of hands, and their feet serve instead of oars. In short, in the space of five or six months, about a hundred of these animals will make banks of four or five hundred paces in length, twenty in heighth, and seven or eight in thickness. The pond being completed, they build their houses near the centre, by making holes at the bottom of the water, for planting six posts, upon which each of their edifices is built in a most curious manner with branches of trees, herbs and earth. Some say they have three stories, that they may mount up from one to the other, when the waters rise by rains or thaw.

The chief food of beavers is the poplar, but they also eat sallow, alder, and most other trees that have not a resinous juice, feeding on the middle bark. In May, when wood is scarce, they live on a large root, a fathom long, which grows in marshes, and is as thick as a man's leg; but at this time their flesh is not so good as when they feed on bark. They will cut down trees with their teeth that are extremely thick; and, when one of them observes that the tree is ready to fall, it gives a loud cry, runs a contrary way, and is followed by the rest. They then cut off all the twigs and smaller branches, two or three fathoms in length, and draw them to their houses; having repaired their pond-head, they thrust one of these sticks into the clay or mud, that they may lie under water, to preserve the bark green and tender for their winter provision. In this manner they serve both the smaller and larger branches, until they come to the trunk of the tree.

The beavers are excellent food, but the tongue and tail are the most delicious parts. They bring

forth their young in the beginning of the summer, when the females are lean by suckling them; the males are also lean all the summer. During this season, these animals are employed in repairing their ponds and houses, and in cutting down and providing wood and branches for their winter store; but they are very fat from November until the end of March. They breed once in a year, and have from ten to fifteen at a litter, which grow up in one season; they therefore multiply very fast, whence if the Indians empty a pond, and take the whole lodge, they generally leave a pair to breed, by which it is again fully stocked in two or three years time. A good hunter can kill 600 beavers in a season, but their canoes are so small, that they cannot carry all away: they therefore sometimes burn off the fur, and roast them.

The ounce is of the cat kind, but as large as a great dog; it preys on all the beasts it can conquer, as does also the tiger, which is the only beast in that country that will not fly from a man. The beeves have a large bunch on their backs, which is the most delicious part of them, it being juicy, rich, and as sweet as marrow, though it weighs several pounds. They are covered with beautiful hair, almost as fine as silk, and one of their fleeces will weigh at least eight pounds.

CHAP. XXIII.

The settlement of Pensylvania. Its rivers, climate, produce, principal towns and commerce.

THE next colony that was settled in America was Pensylvania, the best projected, and the most

flourishing of the English colonies in North America. Admiral Penn, who, in conjunction with colonel Venables, conquered the island of Jamaica, and was afterwards knighted, being in high credit with king Charles II. and the duke of York, had the promise of a grant of this country from that monarch, as a reward for his past services; and some years after his death, his son strenuously solicited the promised grant; which, as the king owed considerable sums to his father, he obtained in the year 1679, and the original patent was dated the 4th of March, 1680. Mr. Penn afterwards obtained part of Nova Belgia, or New York, which was added to the country he had acquired by the first grant; and both together, from his own name, he called Pensylvania, or Penn's country.

But before we proceed, it may be necessary to observe, that the Dutch were the first planters here as well as at New York, and living near the bay, in the neighbourhood of that province, they applied themselves chiefly to trade. Afterwards some of the inhabitants of Finland, settling near the Freshes of Delawar,* applied themselves to husbandry, and had a governor, appointed by their own sovereign the king of Sweden. The vicinity of these two settlements occasioned frequent disputes, until the Dutch growing too powerful for the Swedes, the latter submitted, and their governor made a formal surrender of the country; after which, this province continued subject to that republic, until the English drove the Dutch out of New York.

* The river Delawar, above and below the falls, is, for a considerable length, called the Freshes; and near the mouth are marshes, which are extremely fertile.

Before Mr. Penn sent over the first adventurers under his patent, there were a few Englishmen in Pensylvania, over whom he placed, as governor, colonel William Markham, his nephew, to whom both the Swedes and Dutch submitted. Mr. Penn had the more earnestly solicited the above grant, on account of the persecution that the society called Friends, or Quakers, of which he was a member, had suffered in England, he himself having been many times thrown in prison, not only for preaching, but merely being present at their assemblies: he therefore resolved to put himself at the head of as many of these people as would go with him, and remove to this country: but he first sent over a body of settlers, from London, Liverpool and Bristol, who purchased considerable quantities of land, at the rate of twenty pounds for a thousand acres, and paying a small quit-rent. The male and female servants were to have fifty acres when their time was out, and the owners of land thirty acres a head for such servants. In order to secure the new planters from the Indians, he appointed commissioners to treat with them about the land, and to confirm a league of peace: by these first adventurers, he also sent a very affectionate letter to the native Indians, and went himself to Pensylvania the same year, taking with him a great number of people, who, with those that immediately followed him, amounted to two thousand people.

As soon as he arrived, he took the government into his own hands, entered into a treaty of peace with the Indian kings, and, instead of taking advantage of his patent, purchased of them the lands he had obtained by his grant. He then settled the constitution and laws of the country, with the con-

sent of the inhabitants, by whom it was unanimously agreed, according to the fundamental constitution of Pensylvania, which he himself had drawn up, and published in England, that all persons who acknowledged the existence of God, should enjoy free liberty of conscience, and have the full posession of civil liberty; and that no laws should be made, nor money raised, without the consent of the inhabitants, who were also allowed to enact what laws they pleased for the prosperity and security of the province. He established courts of justice in every county, with proper officers; and to prevent litigation or contention, three men were chosen by every county-court, in the nature of arbitrators, to hear and put an end to all the differences that might arise between them; he also instituted an orphans-court in each county, to inspect and regulate the affairs of widows and orphans every spring and autumn.

Mr. William Penn staid there two years, until he had settled every thing to his own satisfaction and that of the people; and he conciliated the affection of the Indians so as to secure their love and esteem for himself and his people. They still speak of him with the utmost gratitude, and whenever they would express an extraordinary regard for an Englishman, they say, we love you as if you were that good man William Penn himself.

We shall now proceed to a more particular description of this settlement, which is divided into three upper and three lower counties. The three upper counties, Buckingham, Philadelphia and Chester, are the Pensylvania mentioned in king Charles's grant, and are taken out of Nova Belgia. The upper counties end at Marcus Hook, four miles

below Chester-town; the lower run along the coast one hundred and twenty miles, and are forty deep towards Maryland. Thus the whole province of Pensylvania, from the Falls-townships, to twenty miles below Hanlope, or Cape William, is in length three hundred and thirty miles, and in breadth two hundred.

The chief rivers in Pensylvania are, the Delawar, which rises far north in the country of the Iroquois, takes its course to the southward, and dividing this province from that of New Jersey, falls into the Atlantic Ocean between Cape May and Cape Hanlope, being navigable for large vessels upwards of two hundred miles; but a cataract above Bristol, renders the navigation impracticable. The second river is that of Susquahannah, which also rising in the country of the Iroquois, runs south through the middle of Pensylvania, falls into Chesapeake-bay, and is navigable for large ships. The third river is, the Schuylkill, which has likewise its source in the country of the Iroquois, and runs south almost parallel to the rivers Delawar and Susquahannah, until at length turning eastward, it falls into the Delawar at the city of Philadelphia. This river is also navigable for large ships as far as that city, and for boats a hundred miles higher. These rivers, and the numerous bays and creeks in Delawar-bay, render this country admirably calculated for foreign trade.

The air here is very pure: autumn begins about the 20th of October, and lasts until the beginning of December. Frosty and cold seasons are frequent, and sometimes the river Delawar, notwithstanding its breadth, is frozen over; but in such seasons the air is dry, clear and agreeable. The spring lasts

from March to June, during which the weather is more inconstant. In the summer months, July, August and September, the heats are excessive, but are alleviated by cool breezes, that render them more supportable. During this season the wind is southwest, but in spring, autumn and winter, it is generally north-west. The earth is fruitful, and easy to be cleared, as the roots of the trees lie near the surface.

Philadelphia produces almost all sorts of trees, which are different in some respects from the European, though they are called oak, red, white and black ash, beech, walnut, Spanish chesnuts, cypress, and red and white cedar; but the most durable are poplar, gumwood, hickery and sassafras. They have also apples, quinces, pears, cherries, musk-melons, snake-root, sarsaparilla, cranberries, salop and spruce; and all sorts of corn, as wheat, barley, oats, rye, pease, beans, and Indian corn, besides hemp and flax.

Of the living creatures for food and convenience, they have moose-deer as large as small oxen, rabbits, racoons and beavers, horses, cows and sheep. As to fowl, they have very fine bustards, of forty or fifty pounds weight, pheasants, heath-birds, partridges, swans, geese, pigeons, ducks, teal and snipe. The fish are, sturgeons, herrings, eels, smelts and perch; the latter are caught in abundance in Delawar-bay; and in the river, above the Freshes, are oysters, crabs, cockles and muscles.

It is not to be wondered at, that in a country so pleasant and fruitful, and where there was the fairest prospect of living happily, people should resort thither in great numbers, especially as they were to enjoy the most beneficent form of government

ever devised by man; or that in a short time, many towns should be built, and vast tracts of country scattered over with plantations. The principal of these towns is Bristol, situated on the river Delawar, in the county of Buckingham, the most northerly of any in this province. This town is opposite to Burlington in New Jersey, and twenty miles north of the city of Philadelphia. In this country is the manor-house of Pennsbury, a fine edifice, built by Mr. William Penn, the first proprietor, on an eminence which commands the country. In the county of Philadelphia, which lies south of that of Buckingham, is the city of the same name, the capital of Pensylvania, situated in 40° 30′ north latitude, and is built upon one of the finest plans that ever was formed, being laid out by Mr. Penn himself. It is an oblong of near two miles, extending from the river Delawar almost to the river Schuylkill, the east end fronting the river Delawar, and the west the Schuylkill; each front being a mile in length. Every owner of one thousand acres had his house in one of the two fronts opposite the rivers, or in the High-street, running from the middle of one front to the middle of the other; and every owner of five thousand acres had an acre in front of his house, and the others half an acre, for gardens and court-yards. In the centre of the town is a square of ten acres, surrounded by the town-house and other public buildings; and in each quarter of the city is a square of eight acres. The High-street, which runs the whole length of the city, is one hundred feet wide, parallel to which run eight streets, that are crossed by twenty more at right angles, all of them thirty feet wide. Several canals are let into the town from each river,

which add to the beauty and convenience of the place, and there is also a quay two hundred feet square, to which ships of four or five hundred tons may come up, with wet and dry docks for building and repairing of ships, besides magazines, warehouses, and all manner of conveniences for importing and exporting merchandise.

The other principal towns in the county of Philadelphia, are Oxford and German- own; the last is a thriving, populous place, inhabited by Germans, who there speak and transact their business in their own language. The city of Radnor is also situated in this county, on the south-west of the Schuylkill-river, which is the capital of a large country planted by the Welch. To the south of the county of Philadelphia lies that of Chester, the capital of which is the town of Chester, situated on the river Delawar; and, to the southward of Chester lies the town of Chichester. At each of these two last towns are ports sufficient to receive and secure the largest fleets from storms. The county of New-Castle lies south of that of Chester, and its capital is of the same name; it is a town of brisk trade, and has an iron mine in its neighbourhood. The town of Apoquinemink lies on the river Delawar, south of New-Castle, and is a place of great trade. The county of Kent lies south of the county of New-Castle; and Dover, its chief town, has a very commodious port. The most southern county is Sussex, the capital of which is Lewis; it has a good harbour, and carries on a considerable trade.

The exports of Pensylvania consist of wheat, rye, barley, oats, pease and beans, Indian corn, pot-ashes, wax, furs, skins, horses, beef, pork, fish salted and barrelled, pipe-staves, &c. in return for which they

import silver and gold, sugar, rum, molasses, salt, wine, clothing of all kinds, hardware, tools, toys, &c. They have also a small quantity of rice, and some tobacco of the worst sort. They trade with the Indians for the skins and furs of wild beasts, who purchase from them, in return, shirts, blankets, arms, ammunition, rum and other spirits.

CHAP. XXIV.

The motives and plan for settling the province of Georgia. The first colony sent under the direction of Mr. Oglethorpe. His proceedings. The number, situation and importance of the towns and forts in this province. A description of the country.

SOME persons of distinction observing, that considerable numbers of the people of England were, by a variety of misfortunes, rendered incapable of subsisting in such a way as to be useful to themselves and the community, formed a design of settling that part of America, which, though within the bounds of the province of Carolina, as described in its charter, was, in reality, no part of it, as not being at all settled; and, for that reason, rather a burden than an advantage to the province to which it belonged. They therefore applied to the crown for sufficient powers to set this undertaking on foot, and meeting with all the encouragement they could desire or expect, easily obtained a very extensive charter. Their next care was to raise a fund sufficient for sending over a considerable number of people, and providing them with all kinds of necessaries, towards which they subscribed liberally themselves, obtained considerable sums by way of collection, and had also a grant from parliament of £10,000.

In laying the plan for this settlement, it was resolved to consider each settler in a double capacity, as a planter and as a soldier; to provide arms for their defence, as well as tools for the cultivation of the land, and to have them taught the use of both. It was also resolved, that on the first settling this colony, towns should be laid out, and lands allotted each of the men for their support, as near those towns as possible. It was agreed, that every lot of land should consist of fifty acres, and that it should be granted them in tail male, as the properest tenure for the colony in its infancy; and with respect to any hardships that might arise from this tenure, they determined to remedy them occasionally, until such time as the situation of the colony should render an alteration necessary; they also determined to prohibit Negroes, the use of them being absolutely inconsistent with the design of forming a frontier colony, and in many respects inconvenient and dangerous.

These dispositions being made, it was resolved to send over one hundred and fourteen persons, men, women and children, out of such as were in low circumstances, and by that means unable to follow any business in England, and who, if in debt, had leave from their creditors to go; and of such as were recommended by the minister, churchwardens, or overseers of their respective parishes; and James Oglethorpe, Esq. one of the trustees, offered to go and form the settlement at his own expence.

On the 24th of October, 1732, the people were all examined, whether any of them had objections to the terms and conditions proposed; when they declared that they were fully satisfied with them,

and executed articles under their hands and seals, testifying their consents thereto: but four of them desiring their daughters might inherit as well as their sons, and that their widows dower might be considered; the trustees immediately resolved, that every person who would desire the same, should have the privilege of naming a successor to the lands granted him; who in case the possessor should die without issue male, should hold the same to them and their heirs for ever; and that the widows should have their thirds as in England. This resolution was communicated to the people, who now expressed themselves fully satisfied.

The trustees then prepared a form of government, and established under their seal a court of judicature, for trying causes, civil as well as criminal, in the town of Savannah, the name given to the first town to be raised: they also appointed a bailiff, a recorder, two constables, and two tything men, out of such of the settlers as appeared most prudent and discreet.

These measures being taken, Mr. Oglethorpe set out for Gravesend on the 15th of November, 1732, and from thence sailed for Carolina, where he arrived with the colony on the 15th of January following. They were received at Charles-town, by the governor, with great cordiality, when Mr. Middleton, the king's pilot, was ordered to steer the ship into Port-royal, and to convey the small craft with the colony from thence to the river Savannah. On the 18th Mr. Oglethorpe went on shore, and left a guard upon John's, a point of that island, which commands the channel, and is about half-way between Beaufort and the river Savannah. He then proceeded to Beaufort-town,

where he was saluted with a discharge of artillery, and had a new barrack fitted up, where the colony landed on the 20th, and were chearfully assisted by the officers and gentlemen of the neighbourhood. From thence he went to view the Savannah river, and having pitched upon a convenient spot, ten miles up, the ground was marked out, and the first house begun on the 9th of February, 1733.

The chief reasons that determined Mr. Oglethorpe in the choice of this place were, health, pleasure and convenience. Before his arrival in the country, it had the name of Yammacraw, from an Indian nation who inhabited there, under the command of their chief Tomochichi, who readily gave place to the English, and entered into a close friendship with them, which was the more agreeable, as there was no other Indian nation within fifty miles; but Mr. Oglethorpe called the town Savannah, from the name of the river.

While the town was building, Mr. Oglethorpe kept a strict discipline, allowing none of the people to swear or get drunk; they were debarred the use of spirituous liquors, and, instead of rum, had English beer. While this work was going forwards, some of the land was sowed with wheat, some with garden-seeds, and several fruit-trees were planted; the limits of the town were pallisadoed, and the settlement proceeded with the greatest regularity. Every man being appointed his proper station and employment, Mr. Oglethorpe set out for Charlestown, to solicit succours for his colony, where the assembly and inhabitants contributed largely to the assistance of the new comers. Five hundred pounds of this money Mr. Oglethorpe immediately laid out in cattle; and having given directions for provid-

ing at Charles-town what his people might have occasion for, went back to Savannah.

On his return, he found that the chief men of the Lower Creek Indians were come to form an alliance with the new colony. The Lower Creeks are a nation, that formerly consisted of ten, but are now reduced to eight tribes, that have each a different government, but are allied together, and speak the same language. The territory claimed by these tribes, extended from the Savannah river, as far as St. Augustine, and up Flint river, which falls into the bay of Mexico. Tomochichi, and the Indians of Yammacraw, were of the same nation.

Mr. Oglethorpe received the Indians in one of the new houses. They consisted of the chiefs and war captains of the several tribes, and their attendants; all of whom being seated, Oueekachumpa, a very tall old man, stood up, and made a speech, which was interpreted by Mr. Wigan and Mr. Musgrove. He first claimed all the lands to the southward of the river Savannah, as belonging to the Creek Indians; and then added, that though they were but poor and ignorant, he that had given the English breath, had given them breath also, but had bestowed more wisdom on the white men. That they were all persuaded, that the Great Power, who dwelt in heaven and all around, at which he spread out his hands and lengthened the sound of his words, had sent the English thither, for the instruction of them, their wives and their children; that, therefore, they freely gave up to them their right to all the land they did not use themselves. That this was not only his opinion, but the opinion of the eight towns of the Creeks; each of whom, having consulted together, had sent some of their

chief men with skins, which was their wealth. The chief men then brought a bundle of buckskins, and laid eight from the eight towns before Mr. Oglethorpe. He then said that these were the best things they had, and that they gave them with a good heart. He thanked him for his kindness to Tomochichi, to whom he said he was related; and who, though he had been banished from his nation, was a good man, and had been a great warrior; and that, for his wisdom and justice, the banished men had chosen him Mico or king. He concluded with saying, that he had heard the Cherokees had killed some Englishmen; and, that if Mr. Oglethorpe would command them, they would enter with their whole force into the Cherokee country, destroy their harvest, kill the people, and revenge the English.

When he had done speaking, Tomochichi came in with the Yammacraw Indians, and making a low obeisance, said, "I was a banished man, and came here poor and helpless, to look for good land near the tombs of my ancestors, and when you English came to this place, I feared you would drive us away; for we were weak, and wanted corn: but you confirmed our land to us, and gave us food." Then the chiefs of the other nations made speeches, to the same purpose as Oueekachumpa's; after which a treaty of alliance and commerce was agreed to. A laced coat, a laced hat, and a shirt, were then given to each king; each of the warriors had a gun and a mantle of duffils, and all their attendants had coarse cloth for clothing, and other presents.

This treaty being concluded, Mr. Oglethorpe returned to England, to procure the necessary supplies, where he arrived in June 1734, bringing

with him Tomochichi, mico or king of the Yammacraws, Senawki, his consort, and Yoonakowi, his nephew; as also Hillispilli, a war captain, and Apakowtski, Stimaletchi, Sintouchi, Hiuguithi and Umphychi, five other Indian chiefs, with their interpreter.

These Indians were lodged at the Georgia-office, in Old Palace yard, where they were handsomely entertained; and, being suitably dressed, were introduced to the court, which was then at Kensington. Tomochichi presented to the king several eagle's feathers, which, according to their custom, was the most respectful gift he could offer; and then made the following speech: "This day I see the majesty of your face, the greatness of your house, and the number of your people. I come for the good of the whole nation called the Creeks, to renew the peace they have long ago concluded with the English. I am come over in my old days, though I cannot live to reap any advantage to myself. I am come for the good of the children of all the nations of the Upper and Lower Creeks, that they may be instructed in the knowledge of the English. These are the feathers of the eagle, the swiftest of all birds, that fly round our nations. These feathers are in our land a sign of peace, and we have brought them over to leave with you, O great king, as a sign of everlasting peace. O great king, whatsoever words you shall say unto me, I will tell them faithfully to all the kings of the Creek nations." In answer to this his majesty assured him, that all those nations should have his protection and sincere regard.

These Indians afterwards took a tour through England, and, during their stay, gave the most

Indian Chiefs introduced to King George I.

G. Shea. sculp.

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

evident marks of good sense, and of a sincere inclination to carry on a friendly correspondence between their own nation and the English. They particularly desired, that the weights, measures, prices and qualities of goods, to be purchased by them, should be settled. Alledging that the traders had often raised the price of goods, and defrauded them in their weights and measures; which had frequently created animosities between the English and Indians, that had ended in wars, prejudicial to both nations. In compliance with this request, the trustees procured several acts of parliament; one for maintaining peace with the natives; another to prevent the importation and use of spirituous liquors in the province of Georgia; and another to prevent the introduction of negroes into that province.

After this settlement two embarkations were made, in the same year, chiefly of Saltzburghers, who built and settled the town of Ebenezer, upon the river Savannah. The succeeding year the colony of South Carolina sending over a memorial, relating their danger from the French and Spaniards, the parliament granted the trustees an extraordinary supply of £26,000, and very considerable benefactions were made both in England and Carolina, on which account great numbers of people were sent, who consisted mostly of German protestants, and others from the north of Scotland.

In January, 1735, some Highlanders arrived in Georgia, and were settled on the Alatamaha-river, about sixteen miles distant from the island of St. Simon, which is at its mouth. They soon raised convenient huts until their houses could be built, and the town, at their desire, was called Darien, which name that district still retains, though they after-

wards changed the name of the town to that of New Inverness.

On the 6th of February following Mr. Oglethorpe arrived with a reinforcement of four hundred and seventy persons, who were settled on the island of St. Simon. The Creek Indians came down on this occasion, and, in consequence of their claiming a right to the country, were treated with, when they agreed that the English should possess that and all the adjacent islands. This necessary step being taken, the town of Frederica was laid out, and the people set to building houses.

The island of St. Simon is conveniently situated at the mouth of the Alatamaha, a very fine river; it is about forty miles in extent, has a rich, fruitful soil, and is full of oak and hiccory-trees, interspersed with meadows. As soon as this settlement was made, care was taken for its security, on account of its being the southern barrier. A regular fortress, strengthened with four bastions and a spur-work, was erected at Frederica; a strong battery was also raised for the protection of Jekyll-sound; and another fort was built on the south-west part of Cumberland-island. But while these precautions were taking on the south frontier, the northern part of the colony was not neglected: orders were given for erecting a fort at Augusta, a place situated on the river Savannah, where the traders with the Indians from South Carolina and Georgia resorted, and where there were large warehouses furnished with such goods as were wanted by the Indians. The deer-skins taken in exchange were sent two hundred and thirty miles down the river, to the town of Savannah, in boats that carried about nine thousand weight each. A horse-road was also made

from Augusta to the town of Savannah, and another to the dwellings of the Cherokee Indians. By these precautions the trade of both colonies with these Indians was facilitated, and the country on that side secured from the attempts of an enemy.

The colony now became so considerable, as not only to draw the attention, but to excite the jealousy of the Spaniards, who would have been glad to have overpowered and driven out their neighbours; but the Indians being strongly attached to the English, the governor of St. Augustine, on mature deliberation, found it more expedient to enter into a negociation, and to endeavour to conclude an amicable agreement with the English colony. Mr. Oglethorpe concluded a treaty with him on very safe and advantageous terms, in which it was mutually agreed, that neither the Indians subject to the king of Spain should attack the subjects of Great Britain, nor the Creeks commit hostilities against the subjects of his catholic majesty; that Mr. Oglethorpe should draw off the garrison and artillery from the island of St. George, provided that none of his catholic majesty's subjects should inhabit it, and that no prejudice should thence arise to the right of his Britannic majesty to that island; that the subjects of neither crown should molest each other, and the differences that might arise, concerning the limits of their respective governments, and the dominion of the two crowns, should remain undecided until the determination of their respective courts was known. But it seems the governor of St. Augustine was not in the secrets of his court, for the Spanish ministry laid claim to Georgia, as being within the dominion of Spain, and began to transport troops into Spanish Florida from the island of Cuba and

other parts of their dominions. They disapproved of the treaty concluded by the governor of St. Augustine, and made open preparations, in order to attack the colony of Georgia.

These preparations soon came to the knowledge of the lieutenant-governor of South Carolina, who, sending a memorial to his majesty, he was pleased to order a regiment of six hundred effective men to be raised, and sent for the defence and protection of Georgia. As an encouragement to these soldiers, the trustees gave each of them an allotment of five acres of land to cultivate for their own use and benefit; and, it was resolved that each soldier, who, after being seven years in the service, should be desirous of quitting it, was to have his regular discharge, and be entitled to a grant of twenty acres.

In the beginning of the year 1737, parliament considering the great expences the trustees had been at in making roads, building fortifications, and sending presents to the Indians, granted them £20,000 more for the farther settling and securing the colony; on which the trustees made another embarkation, chiefly of German protestants. In consequence of such a considerable augmentation of the population; all the towns laid out in Georgia received supplies, and the utmost care was taken to put the fortifications in the best posture of defence that the circumstances of the province would allow.

On the arrival of the regiment, of which Mr. Oglethorpe was appointed colonel, he distributed them in the most proper manner for the service of the colony; but still kept up the same discipline, and took as much care to form and regulate the inhabitants, with respect to military affairs, as before. He also provided parties for different services;

some for ranging the woods, and others light-armed for sudden expeditions; he likewise provided vessels for cruising and gaining intelligence.

The trustees, by their letters and instructions to the magistrates, had constantly exhorted and encouraged the people to cultivate their lands; but in 1738, finding that there were many, who through idleness still continued a burden to them, gave orders for striking off the store, all who having had time to cultivate their lands, neglected this important duty. At length a part of the people sent over a memorial to the trustees, complaining of the want of a fee simple in their lands, and of not being permitted the use of Negroes; but those who were settled on the frontier, and were, consequently, most exposed to the Spaniards, having by their industry improved their plantations, so as to draw from them a comfortable subsistence, sent over a contrary memorial, wherein they represented the disadvantages and dangers that would arise from the permission of Negroes.

At this time they had intelligence, that a conspiracy was formed by the Negroes in South Carolina, to rise, and forcibly make their way out of the province, in order to put themselves under the protection of the Spaniards, who had proclaimed freedom to all who should run to them from their owners. As there was great reason to believe that this rising was to be universal, and as the Negroes were computed at 40,000, while the white inhabitants did not exceed 5000, the whole province was put upon its guard. However, several Negroes who were employed in periaguas, carried them off, and took the benefit of the proclamation, by going to St. Augustine; upon which, the government of

South Carolina sent a solemn deputation, to demand their slaves; but though this was a time of profound peace, the governor of St. Augustine, peremptorily refused to deliver them up, and even declared, that he had orders to receive and protect all who should come to him. Upon these representations, the trustees sent an answer, in which they positively refused to suffer the colony to have the use of slaves.

The trustees had the greatest reason for acting in this manner; since among the persons to whom grants were made, in order to their settling in the colony at their own expence, some never went over to take them up or settle at all; others were gentlemen of Carolina, who neglected the prosecution of their grants, and never so much as desired to see their lands laid out; and several had quitted the laborious life of planters, to reside more at their ease in Savannah, where, by the exercise of their several trades and professions, they brought many people in debt; besides, horse-races and other diversions were set on foot, and such a spirit of idleness began to prevail, as easily accounted for their eagerness in desiring to have the use of Negroes; and plainly showed, with what fatal consequences it must have been attended, if the trustees had not remained firm to their first resolutions, and given such an answer as showed, that they were resolved to preserve that spirit in the colony upon which it was settled. However, to make the people as easy and contented as they could, they enlarged their grants on failure of male issue, and made a certain provision for the widows of the grantees.

In the mean time, the French growing uneasy

at the settlement of Georgia, and its intercourse with the Indians, began to use every method in order to create a jealousy between them and the Creeks, which was no sooner known, than it greatly alarmed not only the people settled in Georgia, but the whole province of Carolina, from a sense of the danger to which they should be exposed, if the French, either by their artifices or presents, should draw over the Creek Indians to their party. Upon this, Mr. Oglethorpe thought it necessary to enter into a closer alliance with that nation, and to take a journey to the Coweta town, though at the distance of five hundred miles from Frederica, and through a country very little known, and difficult for Europeans to travel. He, however, provided himself with horses, and some presents, and after a painful and fatiguing journey, reached that place in safety, where he was received by the Indians with all imaginable marks of friendship and respect; and had an opportunity of conferring, not only with the chiefs of all the tribes of that nation, but also with the deputies of the Choctaws and Chickesaws, who lay between the English and French settlements, and who had sent their deputies thither with that view.

His coming to the Coweta town dissipated all the fears, and extinguished all the jealousies of the Indians. They told him at the first conference, that it had been insinuated to them, that he was coming into that country to deprive them of their lands, and that they had been assured he was actually preparing to invade them; but that by the entire confidence he placed in them, by coming without a body of regular troops, he convinced them that these were all falsehoods and calumnies;

and that instead of injuring them by the settlement he was making, it would prove a new security to them, as well as to the English, and put it out of the power of their common enemies to hurt them; and, in short, they readily concluded a new, more full, and explicit treaty with him. Thus the designs of the French were unravelled, and the Creek nation became more closely connected with the English.

We have now passed through the history of this province, for above seven years, and shall therefore, according to our plan, give a description of it. The town of Savanna is in 31° 58′ north latitude, and is excellently situated for trade, as the navigation of the river is very secure, and as ships of three hundred tons may lie within six yards of the town, where the worm does not eat into them.

About four miles from the river are Highgate and Hampstead, two villages, that lie about a mile distance from each other. The people settled there apply themselves chiefly to gardening, and supply the town of Savannah with greens and roots.

About fifteen miles from Savannah is a village called Abercorn; and about twenty miles farther up the river, is the town of Ebenezer, where the Saltsburghers are settled. The people of this place are sober and industrious, and not only raise a sufficient quantity of corn for their own subsistence, but also supply the people at Savannah, who have not been so careful of their plantations.

About ten miles from thence is Old Ebenezer, situated upon a river which runs into the Savannah, where are kept a great number of cattle, for the use of the public and for breeding; and, at a considerable distance from this is the town of Augusta,

which, from the great resort of traders and Indians, is in a flourishing state. In the northern part of the province is the town of Inverness, on the river Alatamaha, where the Highlanders settled. On the island of St. Simon, situated on the sea coast, is the town of Frederica, which is surrounded with strong fortifications.

The land of Carolina is low near the sea, and covered with wood, but begins to rise into hills, at twenty-five miles distance, and at length terminates in hills; these, running in a line from north to south, along the back of Virginia and Carolina, end in the province of Georgia, about two hundred miles from the bay of Apalachia, in the gulf of Mexico. A range of islands runs parallel to the coast of Georgia, and defends it from the fury of the ocean; and as both the continent and the islands are well wooded, the channels between them are extremely pleasant. There are also sand-banks, that extend upwards of seventy miles, from the coast of Georgia, the coast shoaling gradually until within six miles of the land, where the shallowness of the bank precludes all further passage, except in the channels between the bars.

When vessels have passed these bars, they find a commodious and secure harbour in the mouth of the river Savannah, which is navigable three hundred miles for boats; and there is a still more capacious one in Jekyl-sound, where a large fleet can ride at anchor in ten or fourteen fathoms water. On this coast the tides generally flow seven feet.

Though the country of Georgia is not very fruitful, yet it produces some most valuable commodities, and particularly silk, which is generally allowed be equal to any brought from Italy.

The people here reap very good wheat in May, mow their grass in June, and might cultivate rice with great advantage: olives flourish in the greatest perfection; and, in the southern part of the province, orange-trees thrive so well, that within seven years time they have been known to grow fifteen feet from the root to the branches.

CHAP. XXV.

An account of Nova Scotia, from its first discovery to its complete settlement.

WE are now brought by the order of time to the settlement of Nova Scotia, or Acadia. This country was, in the reign of queen Elizabeth, considered as a part of Virginia, and as such was included in the charter of the western company, established by king James I.

In the year 1618, sir Samuel Argall, governor of Virginia, made a cruising voyage along the coast northward, as far as Cape Cod, in New England; when the Indians informing him, that some white men, like himself, were come to inhabit to the northward of them, he, being sensible that all the country, as far as it had been discovered, belonged to his employers, the Virginia company, sailed thither, and found a settlement, with a French ship riding before it. This vessel having but one deck, sir Samuel soon drove the men from it with his small arms, and having taken the ship, landed his men, marched to the fort, and summoned it to surrender. The French asked time to consider of it; but this being denied, they got privately away, and fled into the woods; upon which the English

entered the place, and having lodged there that night, the French came the next day, and surrendered themselves to sir Samuel, cancelling the patents that had been granted for their settlement by the French king. Sir Samuel now permitted those who chose it, to stay until they could procure a passage to Europe, in some of the fishing vessels which then frequented the coast; and those who were willing to join the English, he took with him to Virginia.

Being then informed, that the French had another settlement at a place they called Port-royal, situated in a bay on the south-west coast of Acadia, he sailed thither, and obliged them also to surrender; when resolving that they should quit the country, he made those who did not wish to return home, to remove to the river St. Laurence, where Quebec, now the capital of Canada, has been since built.

In the year 1621, sir William Alexander, afterwards earl of Stirling, applied to king James I. for a grant of the country to the north of New England: when it was suggested to the king, that the tract of country on the continent of North America, belonging to the crown, being very large, and not likely to be planted by the English in any reasonable time, it would be a very wise and prudent measure, to grant, under the great seal of Scotland, a part of it to his subjects of that kingdom, upon a supposition, that it would be more beneficial to them, and more for the interest of the nation, if they went over and settled there, than, as they frequently did, remove to Poland, Sweden and Russia, where there were many thousands of Scotch families.

These reasons appeared of such weight to king James, that he readily granted a patent to sir William, and the next year that gentleman, and some others who were concerned with him, sent a ship with passengers to plant and settle there. At that time Newfoundland was well known, on account of the fishery; and the ship being late in her voyage, put in and wintered there. In 1623 they sailed from thence, and made the cape at the north shore of the island of Cape Breton; coasting until they came to Cape Sable in Acadia, they discovered three good harbours, and went ashore at one of them, which they called St. Luke's-bay. They there found a large river that had eight fathoms water at ebb; having sailed up it the ship returned to England, and the proprietors published an account of the country, which they described as a kind of paradise: sir William Alexander himself wrote and published a book on this subject, and king James, in order to facilitate the plantation, erected a new order, called the knights of Nova Scotia.

Thus that country, called by the French Acadia, obtained the name of Nova Scotia, or New Scotland, from its being intended to be settled by the Scots; but the scheme of that settlement was turned into a job, and by that means defeated. Afterwards another grant of the northern part of the country was made to sir David Kirk, from whom the French king bought it, or at least agreed to give him £5,000 for it. Though it is evident that this proprietor had no right to dispose of the property of the crown in that country, yet it is an evident proof that the French acknowledged the right by which that proprietor held it; and so just an opinion had they of

the pusillanimity of king James, as to be in no apprehensions of his vindicating the unalienable rights of the nation.

Oliver Cromwell, however, sent major Sedgwick to dislodge the French from Port-royal, in which he succeeded; and, though he afterwards consented that a French proprietor should possess the country, yet it was on condition that he purchased it from the earl of Stirling, which he did, but afterwards sold it to sir Thomas Temple, who was both proprietor and governor at the restoration: after this the French settled there again, and continued in quiet possession of the country until the year 1690, when they were dispossessed by sir William Phipps, governor of New England; but it was restored to them by king William III. at the treaty of Ryswick.

In all these changes the island of Cape Breton followed the fate of Nova Scotia, and both continued in the hands of the French until the year 1710, when governor Nicholson made himself master of Port-royal, which was then become a place of great consequence, as it gave the French an opportunity of distressing the trade of the English to such a degree, that it was properly stiled the Dunkirk of America. The taking this place was, therefore, considered as an important service; and queen Anne, to show that she would never part with it, gave it her own name, and called it Annapolis-royal. On colonel Nicholson's return to England, she made him governor of Nova Scotia and Annapolis-royal, and commander in chief of her forces there and in Newfoundland.

The province continued in this situation, when the treaty of Utrecht was concluded, by which the right to Nova-Scotia or Acadia, with all its ancient

boundaries, the city of Port-Royal, now called Annapolis, and their dependencies, together with the dominion, property and possession thereof, were for ever vested in the crown of Great Britain: to which the French king added, the exclusion of the subjects of France from fishing on the coast of Nova-Scotia, and within 30 leagues, beginning from Cape Sable, and stretching along to the south.

This colony was, however, much neglected for many years; for though Nova-Scotia had been so long delivered up to the English, yet they had scarcely any settlement there, except at Annapolis-Royal and Canso, while the French had a number of little towns and villages, scattered along the coast, and on the banks of the rivers; but the English commander at Annapolis was, in some degree, acknowledged as governor. The country was then divided into ten or twelve districts; and each district annually chose a deputy, subject to the approval of the commander and council at Annapolis. This deputy was a sort of agent for his countrymen, the descendants of the French, and reported the state of it from time to time. There was no civil power; the French missionaries, who were appointed by the bishop of Quebec, acted as magistrates, or justices of the peace, in the districts and villages; yet all complaints might, if the parties thought proper, be brought before the commander and the council at Annapolis, which was very rarely done. In the ensuing war, these descendants of the French joined with that nation, destroyed Canso, and laid siege to Annapolis, but without success; so that at the conclusion of the peace, in the beginning of 1749, there was no other English in Nova-Scotia, besides the garrison of

Annapolis, and the inhabitants who lived within a few miles round that place.

The earl of Halifax, immediately after peace was concluded, projected the complete settlement of Nova-Scotia; and, animated with the warmest zeal for the honour and interest of his country, resolved to use his utmost endeavours to carry it in the most effectual manner into execution. With the approbation of his majesty, the lords commissioners of trade and plantations, in March 1749, published proposals, offering grants of land in fee-simple, proportioned to their respective ranks, to such of the officers and private men as, at the conclusion of the war, had been dismissed his majesty's sea and land-service, and were willing to settle in Nova-Scotia. The same grants that were proposed to private soldiers and sailors, were also offered to carpenters, ship-wrights, smiths, masons, joiners, brickmakers, bricklayers, and all other artificers necessary in building and husbandry. In short, all who were willing to accept these proposals, were to be subsisted with their families, not only during their passage, but for twelve months after their arrival at Nova-Scotia, and to be furnished with arms and ammunition, as far as should be thought necessary for their defence; with a proper quantity of materials and utensils for husbandry, clearing and cultivating their lands, erecting houses, carrying on the fishery, and such other purposes as might be found proper for their support. These proposals had all the success that could be desired; and about the beginning of May most of the transports set sail from Portsmouth, with above 3000 families, and soon after others followed from Liverpool and Ireland. This embarkation, which

was the largest that had been made on such an occasion, was doing at once what in other settlements had not been done under a long course of years.

This great number of settlers arrived safe at Chebucto harbour, on the 28th of July, after a pleasant passage of between five and six weeks; losing few or none in the voyage, which was in a great measure owing to the ventilators fixed in the transports; a happy invention, then but lately discovered. This numerous body, on its arrival, found the Sphinx of 20 guns, which had entered the harbour a few days before, with colonel Cornwallis, their governor, on board. His excellency had been informed of the arrival of the French at Cape-Breton, which had been just restored to that nation; he therefore sent for the English garrison from Louisburgh, and they soon after entered the harbour, with the regiments of Hopson and Warburton, on board other transports; the officers bringing with them all their furniture, several milch cows, and other stock, with military stores, and ammunition of all sorts. About the same time there also arrived a company of rangers from Annapolis, for the protection of the colony.

The next care of the governor was, the choice of a proper spot for the first settlement; and as the peninsula appeared preferable, from its commodious situation and the fertility of the soil, the able-bodied men on board each ship were employed in clearing ground, at the entrance of Sandwich-river; but many objections being soon found against that place, another spot was chosen, on the side of Chebucto harbour, and on the declivity of a rising ground, that commanded the whole peninsula, and would shelter the town from the north-west winds.

The beach they found was a fine gravel, the anchorage was every where good for large ships, within gun-shot of the town, and small but navigable rivers, of fresh and wholesome waters, flowed round about it. Here then they made a second, and more successful attempt; and indeed it would not have been easy to have chosen a more happy situation; they therefore cleared the ground in as expeditious a manner as possible, and, having erected a large wooden house for the governor, with proper storehouses, the ground was laid out so as to form a number of straight and beautiful streets, crossing each other at equal distances; the work went on briskly; several ships, laden with planks, door-cases, doors, window-frames, and other parts of houses, arrived from New-England; and the people being employed in ships companies, created an emulation, that rendered their labours remarkably successful; so that, in about three year's time, this town, which was named Halifax, from the noble lord to whom this settlement owed its beginning, was finished, and every family had a good house of their own, of which the master was landlord. Within the same space of time was also erected a church, wharfs, the town pallisadoed, fortifications erected, and some land cleared for the purposes of agriculture and planted.

Nova-Scotia is situated in between 41° 30′, and 49° 30′ north latitude, and between 60 and 66 degrees of west longitude. It is bounded by the bay of St. Laurence, on the north-east; by the river of St. Laurence on the north-west; by New-England on the south-west; and by the bay of Fundy and the Atlantic ocean, on the east. According to these limits, it contains about 420 miles in length, and

380 in breadth. The south-eastern part is a large peninsula, extending from the north-east to the south-west, and joined to the main land by an isthmus a little above the gulf of Canso. Though the weather is very sharp in winter, yet the air, especially about the town of Halifax, is remarkably clear; so that the severest frosts are frequently accompanied with a fine azure sky and sunshine: but though the cold in winter is very severe, the summer is hotter than in England. The coast has the advantage of many bays, harbours and creeks; and the interior is enriched by many rivers, some of which are navigated for a long course by the natives. The harbour of Chebucto, upon which the capital is situated, may justly be esteemed one of the finest in the world, and possesses extraordinary advantages for a fishery. Upon the opposite side are several large rivers, among which that of St. John is the most considerable. It is ten leagues distant from the gut of Annapolis, and has a very long course. There are prodigious falls of water near its mouth, thirty fathoms deep, occasioned by the channel being here pent up between two steep mountains. By this river, and the assistance of some land carriage, there is a communication with the river of St. Laurence.

The woods abound with game, especially partridges, wild ducks, wild geese, woodcocks, herons, pigeons, &c. among the beasts are most of the sorts found in New England. The trees are oak, fir, spruce, birch, &c. and the fruit growing wild, are gooseberries, rasberries, &c. The exports chiefly consist of lumber, such as planks, staves, hoops, joists, &c. and fish.

THE DISCOVERIES AND SETTLEMENTS

OF THE

FRENCH IN AMERICA.

CHAP. I.

Voyages made to America, by John Verazzano, in the reign of Francis I. The first establishment of the French on the banks of the river St. Laurence. Description of Canada; its lakes, rivers and cataracts.

THE French have published some accounts of their visiting North America, at the close of the fifteenth, and the beginning of the sixteenth centuries; but these accounts, which are very uncertain, can at most only prove, that some French seamen and pilots were then employed in the Newfoundland fishery, and had some small knowledge of the adjacent continent.

However, in 1523, Francis I. began to think of forming settlements on the coast of America, and with this view sent John Verazzano, a Florentine, with one ship, on board of which were fifty men, with provisions for eight months; but he returned to Dieppe in July, 1524, and we have no account that he made any discoveries.

He, however, sailed again on the same design, towards the latter end of the following year, and arrived on some part of the coast of North Ame-

rica, but where is not certain. He was, however, so timorous, that he did not venture within any of the bays or ports; but wanting water, and lying in a road near the shore, he persuaded one of the seamen to swim to it, and by means of some presents with which he furnished him, endeavour to procure what he wanted from the natives, who came down in crowds upon the strand to gaze at the ship.

The poor mariner, on his landing and getting a nearer view of the Indians, was so terrified, that, throwing his presents upon the ground, he ran as fast as he could, and cast himself into the sea, in order to swim to the ship; but the waves threw him back upon the shore with such force, that he lay breathless upon the sands, and would probably have been drowned, if the natives had not hastened to his relief, and taking him up, carried him in their arms to a place at some distance, where with great humanity they took all the pains they could to restore him to his senses. But when he recovered a little, and saw none about him but Indians, he set up a loud cry, at which the natives, hoping to pacify him, cried as loud or louder than he, which terrified him still more. At last they made a great fire, before which they undressed him, greatly admiring the whiteness of his skin. The poor fellow, concluding they were going to burn or to eat him, trembled extremely, while those on board, seeing every thing that was done, expected every moment to see him sacrificed: however, they were soon convinced that these dreadful Indians had not the least intention to hurt him; for after drying his clothes, they suffered him to put them on again, and having given him something to eat, conducted him to the sea side, and then retiring to some dis-

tance, looked on until he safely reached the ship, and then quietly departed; upon which Verazzano returned to France, and reported nothing but this story, and that it happened in the latitude of 50 degrees.

The next year he engaged in a third voyage, wherein he was lost; but from his expeditions, which were carried on thirty years later than those of the Cabots, the French have no great reason to boast of their success. It was some years before they fitted out any more ships for discovery, but at length James Cartier, an experienced pilot of St. Maloes, ventured on another expedition, and sailed from that port on the 20th of April, 1534, with two ships of sixty tons each, and one hundred and twenty men, and arriving on the coast of Newfoundland, found the country covered with ice and snow; this induced him to sail to the southward, and entering a bay which bears the name of Spanish-harbour, he liked both the country and its inhabitants, and went on shore there.

It is reported that the Spaniards had long before visited this coast, and some anthorities are brought to prove it, but finding neither gold nor silver, they hastily returned on board, crying in Spanish, 'Aca nada,' or, There is nothing here. These words being remembered by the Indians, they no sooner saw the French land, than they cried, 'Aca nada, Aca nada,' which the latter mistook for the name of the country, and it has ever since been called Canada; strange as this derivation is, it is mentioned by many esteemed authors.

Cartier afterwards sailed along great part of the coast which borders on the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the islands situated in it, and then returned

home. The next year he was sent again with three large ships to make a settlement, and entering the gulf on the feast of St. Lawrence, gave it that name, which was afterwards extended to the river, though in the first voyage he had called it, the river of Canada: he now sailed up as high as the falls of St. Louis, giving such names to the islands and rivers as he thought proper. But though he at first was much pleased with the country, yet some of the people dying of the scurvy, he began to consider the climate as a very unhealthy one. At last he was himself attacked by this dreadful distemper; upon which, he applied to the inhabitants, to learn whether they had any cure for it, and they taught him to make an infusion of the leaves and bark of the white-thorn tree, by which means all who were sick speedily recovered; and as soon as the season of the year would permit, he returned to Europe without making any settlement.

Three or four years after, the project for settling this country was again revived, and Francis de la Roque, lord of Roberval, undertaking it, king Francis I. granted him letters-patent in 1540, and gave him abundance of titles, as viceroy and lieutenant-general of Canada, Hockelaga, Newfoundland, Belle-isle, Cape Breton, Labrador, &c. allowing him the same power that he had himself in those places. De la Roque, however, being a man of family and fortune, resolved to pursue this expedition, and therefore prevailed upon Cartier by large promises, to undertake another voyage to the coast of Canada, in quality of his pilot; and this gentleman, in two or three voyages, made some settlements, which were the first made by the French in America, but these were afterwards abandoned,

The navigation of the river St. Lawrence fell from time to time into different hands, and several voyages were made there to very little purpose. The French, however, after having settled and abandoned several places, about the year 1608 founded the city of Quebec, and some time after bestowed the name of New France on that country; under which name they not only included Acadia, and other coasts that had long before been discovered by the English, but set up crosses and the French arms, to show that they had taken possession of them. But though the English colonies were then but thinly inhabited, they boldly asserted their prior rights to those places, demolished their crosses, and forced them to confine their views to the gulf and river of St. Lawrence, where, with much difficulty, they raised three or four settlements in the space of twenty years, of which Quebec was the capital.

In the year 1629, sir David Kirk considering Canada as within the limits of the British dominions, with the English under his command, attacked Quebec, and made himself master of all the French settlements. When this news was carried to France, Canada was considered of such little consequence, that it was long debated whether they should demand the restitution of it, though they had already established a company for managing that commerce; but it was at last resolved that it should be demanded, and, accordingly it was restored by the treaty of 1632. From that time they pursued their discoveries and settlements in those parts, for several reigns, without molestation: but those settlements were attended with great difficulties and a vast expence, and company after company was set up

to promote a trade to them, without obtaining any great advantage; for, before the French had made any regular settlements, the country was so far from being agreeable to the constitution of the people, that of numbers sent there, a great part perished by the hardships they endured, many took the first opportunity of returning, and afterwards gave such a dreadful account of the colony they had left, as discouraged others from going thither; but the greatest obstacle the colony met with was, their continual wars with the natives, of which they have given us very large accounts.

The French kept possession of this country until the 13th of September, 1759, when Quebec was surrendered to generals Monkton and Townsend, who commanded the British troops that had been destined for the expedition against it the preceding spring, under the command of general Wolfe; and, on the 8th of September, 1760, all Canada was given up to the English, by the capitulation signed at Montreal by Monsieur de Vaudreuil, the French governor, and general Amherst. It has since been confirmed to the British crown by the treaty of peace concluded at Fontainblean. This country is much the largest the English possess in North America; it is bounded on the north-east by the gulf of St. Lawrence and St. John's-river; on the north-west and south-west by wild, uninhabited lands; and southerly by the states of New York, New England, and the province of Nova Scotia, extending about five hundred miles from the north-east to the south-west, and upwards of two hundred miles in breadth.

Though the northern parts of Canada are situated in the temperate zone, yet the air is excessively

sharp, and their winter, which sets in about the middle of November, and lasts until the middle of May, is so excessively severe, that their largest rivers and lakes are frozen over, and the country is generally covered with disagreeable fogs: but, notwithstanding these inconveniences, towards the south, where it is cultivated, it yields Indian and other sorts of corn, pease, beans, and great plenty of most kinds of herbs and vegetables. The trees and fruits are much the same as in New England, and the same may be said with respect to animals; so that, with a reasonable degree of labour, people may subsist there tolerably well.

The produce of Canada consists of furs, especially castors, and in several kinds of skins, which they purchase from the natives; they likewise export drugs, planks, pipe-staves, &c. The greatest part of the commerce of the country is carried on in light canoes made of bark, and proper for navigating their lakes and rivers, which are encumbered with rocks, and interrupted by water-falls that render them unfit for other vessels. In winter they make use of sledges, drawn either by horses or dogs; and as these are proper for passing over vast tracts of snow and ice, they enable them to continue their commerce with the Indians during the winter.

The great river St. Lawrence, which is, at its mouth, about sixty miles broad, is said to run through five or six great lakes, namely, Ontario, Erie, the Lake of the Hurons, Michigan, the Upper Lake, the Lake of Leuemipagon, and that of the Assiniboils, beyond which the Indians say there is another lake, still greater than any of these, from which this river originally flows; but the truth,

however, seems to be, that this river proceeds from Lake Ontario, and from thence runs a course of two hundred leagues to the sea. At the mouth of the river St. Lawrence lies the island of Anticosti, on which the French had a small settlement, for the sake of trading with the Indian nations on both sides of the river for seal-skins and furs, in exchange for which they gave them fire-arms and ammunition.

The city of Quebec is situated on the great river St. Lawrence, at the distance of about a hundred leagues from its mouth. It is very large and strong, for besides a fortress, or kind of citadel, in which the governor resides, the whole extent of the place is covered by a regular fortification, with several redoubts well furnished with artillery. The principal buildings in this city are the cathedral, the episcopal palace, the Jesuits college, and several other religious houses. But, if it be considered that this was not only the capital, but almost the only city possessed by the French in North America, it is not surprising, that these edifices are very magnificent; and that it contains upwards of 1,500 well built dwelling-houses. From Quebec to Montreal, in the latitude of 45° 55′, the banks of the river are so thoroughly planted, that each of the sides may be considered as a village. The town of Montreal is strong by its situation and fortifications. The Indians come here in canoes to sell their skins, for the sake of which Montreal was built; it is now nearly as large and populous as Quebec.

The manner in which the trade was carried on by the French, is somewhat singular. When the Indians, in alliance with the French, came thither to trade, their chief first demanded audience of the

governor-general, to whom he was, with great ceremony, admitted. This audience was generally given in a great square, in the middle of the town: a chair of state was placed for the governor, and the chiefs of the several Indian nations took their places round him, with their pipes in their mouths. After a due silence, the eldest chief of the Indians laid down his pipe, stood up, and addressed himself to the governor: he told him, that his brethren were come to visit him, and to renew their ancient league and friendship with his nation: that having nothing in view but the care and advantage of the French, they had brought down with them good quantities of skins and furs, being sensible that the French could not obtain so many, or so good, if they did not bring them down to their settlements; that they were fully sensible how much they were esteemed, and knew that what they were to take in exchange were of little value; but that their good friends might not be without furs, they were content to deal with them; and therefore hoped, that in order to enable them to bring a greater plenty of them the next year, as well as to fall upon their enemies, they would let them have guns, powder and ball, upon reasonable terms. At the close of this speech, he laid a string of beads, and a bundle of skins, at the governor's feet, and desired leave to secure them a free and fair trade, and to protect them from robbers. Then he retired to his place, and took up his pipe again. The governor now assured them of his protection, and made them a present in return. The next day the trade began, and was soon over, by which the French gained very considerably; but they were not allowed to sell either wine or brandy to the Indians, because

they were extremely apt to drink to excess, and were then furious and mad; and, at such times, if they did any mischief, they could scarce be brought to give any satisfaction; for they affirmed it was the liquor, and not the man, that did the mischief; and that it was unjust to punish a person for what he did when out of his senses.

The other settlements are scattered at a great distance from each other, along the banks of the rivers and lakes, between which a communication is kept up, by water, and by land carriage, where the cataracts render sailing in the rivers impracticable, without immediate destruction. The first of these lakes, of any consequence, is Ontario, which is 180 leagues in circumference, and between 20 and 25 fathoms in depth. It receives several rivers, besides that of St. Laurence, and its coasts are pretty even and level. From this lake to that of Huron, there is a communication, by means of the river Tanaouate; and there is also a passage from it to that of Erie, up the river Niagara, though a dreadful cataract renders it necessary to make part of the way by land. The lake of Erie, with those of Ontario and Huron, form a triangular peninsula. The lake of Erie, which lies to the south, is 230 leagues in circumference, and every where affords the most delightful prospects; its banks being adorned with oaks, elms, chesnut, walnut, apple and plumb trees; and with vines, that bear their fine clusters up to the very top. The ground is extremely level; and vast quantities of deer and turkeys are to be found in the woods.

Before we take leave of this lake, it will be proper to give a particular description of the fall of Niagara. The whole stream of this river runs with

prodigious rapidity, on its approaching a very deep precipice, whence it falls with a terrible noise, resembling that of thunder; being interrupted in its descent by an island, which runs along the middle: it rushes from thence into the bed of the river at the bottom, where it raises a mist, which rises to an amazing height, and, in fine weather, forms a most beautiful rainbow. The banks are so prodigiously high, that a spectator can scarcely look on the water below without trembling. At the bottom of the cataract, the waters boil and foam in a surprising manner, and continue their course with great impetuosity. The lake of Huron, which has a communication with that of Erie, is about 400 leagues in circumference, and is interspersed with islands; one of which, called Manitoualin, is about 20 leagues long and 10 broad. On the north-west of this lake is the bay of Toronto, which is above 20 leagues long, and 15 broad at its mouth. This bay receives a river, that springs from a little lake of the same name, and forms several cataracts. On the north-west of the lake of Huron is a channel, that has a communication with the Illenois lake, which is also of considerable extent. The Superior or Upper Lake, has also a communication with that of Huron by a channel, that on the north-west extends to Huron lake; and this Upper Lake is computed to be 500 leagues in circumference, including the windings of the creeks and little gulfs. All these large lakes abound in fish, and are exposed to storms and tempests.

CHAP. II.

A description of Isle-royal, or Cape Breton, and of Louisburg, its capital.

THIS island was very early discovered by the English, and was always reckoned a part of Nova-Scotia; for the charter, which constituted that extensive country a distinct province, included Cape Breton in express terms. This was never disputed until after the treaty of Utrecht, though the French had settled there as well as in Nova-Scotia; but by that treaty, the French consented to deliver it up to the English; yet notwithstanding queen Anne ordered the duke of Queensbury, her ambassador at the court of France, to declare that she considered that island as a part of the ancient territory of Nova-Scotia, the French were suffered to keep possession of it; and as they reaped great advantage from its situation, both with respect to the trade of Canada, and the large fisheries carried on at this island, they soon erected fortifications, at a very large expence, and the greatest encouragement was given to those who would settle there. However, in 1745, it was taken by the New-England men, with very little assistance from Great-Britain; but was given up by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. In the next war, the French were again expelled, by general Amherst and admiral Boscawen.

The island of Cape Breton, or Isle-royal, is situated in between 45 and 47 degrees north latitude, and forms, with the island of Newfoundland, from whence it is distant only about fifteen leagues, the

entrance of the Gulf of St. Lawrence; the strait which separates Cape Breton from Nova Scotia, is about five leagues in length, one in breadth, and is called the passage of Fronsac. The length of the island, from the north-east to the south-west, is not quite fifty leagues. It is of a very irregular figure, and cut through by lakes and rivers in such a manner, that its two principal parts are held together, only by an isthmus of about eight hundred paces in breadth; this neck of land separates the bottom of Port Toulouse from several lakes, which are called Labrador. The lakes empty themselves into the sea to the east, by two channels formed by the islands of Verderronne and la Boularderie.

All its ports open to the east, turning a little to the south, and are within the space of fifty-five leagues, beginning at Port Dauphin, and continuing to Port Toulouse, which is almost at the entrance of the passage to Fronsac. In all other parts, it is difficult to find anchorage for small vessels, either in the creeks or among the islands. The northern coasts are very high, and almost inaccessible, and it is difficult to land on the western coast, until you come to the passage of Fronsac, near which, as has been already observed, is Port Toulouse, formerly known by the name of St. Peter. This port is between a kind of gulf, called Little St. Peter's, and the island of St. Peter, opposite the islands Madame, or Maurepas; and thence proceeding towards the south-east is the bay of Gaborie, at twenty leagues distance from St. Peter's island. This bay is a league broad, between islands and rocks, and is two leagues deep, but it is not safe to come near the islands. The harbour of Louisbourgh, formerly called English-harbour, is

not above a league from the above bay, and is perhaps one of the finest in America. It is near four leagues in circumference, and has every where six or seven fathoms water. The entrance is not above two hundred fathoms wide, and lies between two small islands. The town of Louisbourgh is situated on the south-west side, and is pretty strongly fortified, with as much regularity as the situation will admit.

Two leagues farther is the port de la Baleine, the entrance whereof is very difficult, occasioned by the rocks, which, when the sea runs high, lie under water; but though no ships of greater burden than three hundred tons can enter it, these are quite safe when they get in. At less than two leagues distance is the bay of Penadou, or Medanou, the entrance whereof is a league broad, and the bay itself about two leagues in extent. Almost opposite to this bay is the island Scatari, formerly called Little Cape Breton, and is above two leagues long. The bay of Mire is separated from it by a very narrow neck of land. The entrance of this bay is near two leagues wide, and runs at least eight leagues within the land, growing narrower the farther it advances: however, large ships may enter it about six leagues, and find good anchorage under cover of the hills; there are also several other small islands and rocks, that may be seen at a great distance.

The bay of Morienne is higher up, and separated from the bay of Mire, by Cape Brule. A little farther is L'Isle Plate, or L'Isle a Pierre de Fusil. Proceeding from hence, about three leagues to the north-west, there is a very good harbour for small vessels. Two leagues farther is the Bay des

Espagnols, which is about one thousand paces wide at its entrance, but soon growing wider, it divides itself into two branches, which may be sailed up for two leagues; and both these branches are excellent ports. From this bay, to the lesser entrance of Labrador, is a gulf about twenty leagues long, and about three or four wide in the broadest part.

About four leagues from the Bay des Espagnols is Port Dauphin, or St. Anne, which has a secure and safe road for ships at its entrance among the islands of Cibou. A neck of land almost entirely covers the port, leaving a passage for no more than one vessel at a time. The port, however, is near two leagues in circumference, and of an oval form. Ships may lie here just as they please, for the land and the mountains that surround this bay keep off the winds in such a manner that they are hardly felt.

The sea round the island is subject to violent storms of wind, with snow and sleet, and such fogs, that it is frequently impossible to see the length of a ship. But what is still more extraordinary, these fogs will, in the space of one frosty night, case over the rigging of ships with such thick ice, as to render them impossible to be worked until it is beaten off. These circumstances show the advantages of an island filled with such a number of excellent ports, situated in such a tempestuous sea.

The climate is much the same as that of Quebec; but mists and fogs are much more frequent. A great part of the land is but very indifferent; however, it produces oaks of a prodigious size, pines for masts, and all sorts of timber fit for carpenters. The most common sorts are, besides those already mentioned, cedar, ash, maple, aspen, wild-cherry, beech and plane-tree. It produces some sorts of

fruits, particularly apples, with pulse, herbs and roots. They have wheat and all other kinds of grain, with some hemp and flax as good as any in Canada.

It is remarkable that the mountains may be cultivated to the tops, and that the good soil always inclines to the south. The island is sheltered from the north and north-west winds by the mountains of Nova Scotia that border on the river St. Lawrence; these mountains abound with coal.

There are here great numbers of fowl, particucularly partridges, that are almost as large as pheasants. At the arrival of the Europeans, this island was full of deer, but they are now scarce. The lakes, rivers and bays, abound with excellent fish.

CHAP. III.

Settlements made by the French in the Leeward islands.

WE have already given an account of the settlement of the island of St. Christopher by the English and the French, who lived in the greatest harmony together; of the French flying from that island, upon the landing of the Spaniards; and of the English being driven from their settlements, as well as the return of the English and French.

Mr. Desnambue, the French governor, observing that the English colony had made themselves masters of several of the adjacent islands, resolved to send some of the principal persons in his colony to France to procure supplies, chiefly with a view of settling the island of Guadaloupe. Among those sent over, was one Mr. Olive, a bold enterprising

man, who had nothing in view but his own interest, and having some notice of the governor's design, he resolved to supplant him. To effect this purpose he entered into a treaty with one Mr. Du Plessis, and some other merchants of Dieppe; who forming a company for the support of the scheme he had laid, these two were sent over governors with joint authority, to the island of Guadaloupe, where they arrived with about five hundred men, on the 8th of June, 1635.

However, these governors, in the very beginning of their enterprise, committed two mistakes; they settled on the wrong side of the island, where the soil was very bad, and quarrelled with the natives, before the colony was well able to subsist without them. The bad consequences with which these errors were attended, had such an effect on M. Du Plessis, that he died of grief and vexation. Mr. Olive being now left sole governor, his haughtiness and pride would have certainly ruined the colony, if he had not lost his sight. Upon this the company sent over Mr. Aubert, a very discreet and prudent gentleman, to succeed him, who, in a few years, so effectually established it, that the inhabitants have lived happily ever since. Notwithstanding Mr. Desnambue having the misfortune to see Guadaloupe thus taken out of his hands, yet before his death he settled the island of Martinico, which he by that means became proprietor of, and bequeathed to his family by his last will.

In the mean time, cardinal Richelieu, being raised to the ministry, sent over a person of distinction, to take upon himself the government of the whole island, and appointed Mr. De Poincy, a knight of Malta, whom he sent with the title of

governor and lieutenant-general of the islands in America.

This gentleman embarked at Dieppe, on the 15th of January, 1639, and, after a short passage, arrived at Martinico, from whence he went to Guadaloupe, and afterwards to St. Christopher's. He was extremely kind to the industrious part of the community, but punished with the utmost severity, those who were endeavouring to raise estates at the public expence. He caused churches to be built in all these islands, and established an excellent form of justice. His concern for the public good was so apparent, that he became in a manner absolute; and the people, being sensible that he had nothing in view but their interest, obeyed his orders with the utmost alacrity. He changed, in short, the whole face of affairs in that part of the world, settled some islands that were before desert and uninhabited, and contented himself with the pleasure of improving the condition of others, without paying the smallest regard to his own private interests or fortune.

After the death of cardinal Richelieu, the colony sunk by the ill management of the company; and in the year 1651, the chevalier De Poincy purchased the islands of St. Christopher, St. Bartholomew, St. Martin and Santa Cruz, for the order of Malta; and in the same manner other islands were disposed of, for any sum that could be procured for them; which soon brought the affairs of the French, in that part of the world, into a very distracted state. The Dutch, taking advantage of the confusion this created, established magazines at Flushing and Middleburgh for West India commodities, and annually employed in the trade of

the French islands upwards of one hundred ships.

This continued till about the year 1664, when a new company being set up in France, they, with the assistance of the government, purchased back from the knights of Malta and the other proprietors, the rights they had acquired; and having put an end to the Dutch trade, brought the commerce of the colonies once more into their old channel. But after possessing the grant ten years, they began to oppress the inhabitants in such a manner, that the ministry thought fit to interpose, and, in 1680, every thing was settled so as to render the diligent and industrious secure of reaping the fruits of their labours.

After this general view of the manner in which the French islands were settled, we shall proceed to give a concise account of them. Martinico is situated in 14° 30′ north latitude, and in 61° west longitude; it is about thirteen leagues in length, and seven in breadth. From the inland parts, which are mountainous, fall numerous rivers, which, after watering the country, flow into the sea. It has several bays well fortified, the chief of which are, the great bay of Port-royal, the capital of the island, and the bay of St. Pierre, a large town, about seven leagues north-west of Port-royal. This island was inhabited when the French first attempted a settlement in the year 1635, and many battles were fought between them and the natives with various success; at length, however, the French overpowered and cruelly extirpated the ancient inhabitants.

Guadaloupe, the largest of the Caribbee islands, is situated in 16 degrees north latitude, and 61 degrees west longitude, about thirty leagues from

Martinico. It is remarkable for the height of its cliffs and mountains. It is about fifteen leagues in length, and twelve in breadth, divided into two parts by a small arm of the sea, or narrow passage, through which no ship can venture; the inhabitants cross over in a ferry from one part to the other. The country to the west is called Basse Terre, where stands the metropolis, of the same name, and where the citadel and chief strength of the island lies: the part to the east is called Grande Terre. The French began to settle this island about the year 1632, but being unacquainted with the nature of the soil, they were in danger of starving; and afterwards the planters were almost ruined by their divisions: since the beginning of the last century, however, the inhabitants have flourished so much, that they make more sugar than any of the British islands, with the exception of Jamaica. The soil is so rich and fertile, that at Grande Terre the canes are frequently cut six times without re-planting. The far greatest part of what are called Martinico sugars, are the real produce of Guadaloupe, the inhabitants of which were obliged to send them to Martinico before they could be transported to France.

Sugar is the staple commodity of these islands; they also draw a considerable profit from cacao, or the chocolate-nut, ginger, cassia, and pimento, which is also called Jamaica-pepper or all-spice, of which they export considerable quantities; they likewise export rocou, for the use of dyers, a variety of medicinal gums, and sweetmeats of several kinds. These islands produce several sorts of valuable woods for dyeing, in-laying, and cabinet-work, as rose-wood, which, when wrought and polished, has

a very beautiful appearance, as well as a fine smell. The Indian-wood is also of the same nature, and the iron-wood, so called from its excessive hardness, is preferable either to cedar or cypress. They have great quantities of Brasil-wood, brasileto, fustic or yellow wood, and green ebony, which is both used by the cabinet-makers and dyers; to these commodities may be added tortoise-shell and raw hides.

But though these islands produce so many rich and valuable commodities, they stand in need of very large supplies of various kinds of necessaries, without which they could not possibly subsist, such as horses and cattle of all kinds; dry fish, corn, roots, and all sorts of lumber.

CHAP. IV.

Formation of the French settlements in the islands of Tortuga and Hispaniola, or St. Domingo. The progress and trade of that colony. A description of the small island of Avache, and the island of Cayenne; its productions and commerce.

WE shall now proceed to the island of St. Domingo, which was discovered by Columbus in his first voyage in 1492, and called by him Hispaniola; but afterwards building a city, to which he gave the name of St. Domingo, in honour of his father Dominick, the name was first extended to that quarter, and at length the whole island was called St. Domingo; by which name it is known at present. Though this island is reckoned only four hundred leagues in circumference, yet if all the creeks, bays and inlets be measured, it will be found to amount to at least six hundred. It is the most

fertile and pleasant island in the West Indies; for the forests are of vast extent, the trees larger, and the fruit more beautiful and better tasted than in the other islands: the savannahs or meadows are also very extensive, and contain innumerable herds of black cattle, indigenous to the country, besides wild horses and hogs, produced from those animals brought over by the Spaniards. There is scarcely any place in the world better watered by small brooks and navigable rivers, all of which are full of fish; and, when this island was first discovered by the Spaniards, they found great quantities of gold, silver and copper, which have failed since the destruction of the natives.* This, with many other reasons, concurred at length to induce several of the Spaniards to leave the island, particularly the severity of the government, for the sovereign council of the Indies being established at St. Domingo, the inhabitants were kept within stricter bounds than in other places; the immense riches gained by their countrymen in Mexico and Peru, induced numbers to join them, in hopes of coming in for a share of those treasures; the great demands for men to maintain the Spanish conquests on the continent; their cruelly destroying the natives, which deprived them of their assistance in cultivating the land, for as yet the use of Negroes had not reached the Spanish settlements; and the descents of the English and French on the western part of the island; these several circumstances, by degrees, induced the Spaniards to abandon all the country between Monte Christo and Cape Mongou,

* See an account of the discovery of this island in Columbus's first voyage; and the Discoveries of the Spaniards from the death of Columbus to Cortes's expedition, vol. I.

The manner in which the French settled themselves, being very singular, we shall here give an account of it. The Buccaneers, who were originally no more than hunters, fixed themselves on the coast of Hispaniola, to enjoy the advantage of killing black cattle, and selling their skins. These having built some villages, erected several fortifications for their defence, while others laid out plantations, in which they raised tobacco and other valuable commodities; meanwhile the privateers, furnished with commissions from the French governor of Petit Guaves, to cruise on the Spaniards, with persons on board of all nations, frequently entered the ports, in order to careen and victual their ships; and these three sorts of people became extremely useful to each other, for while the hunters and other settlers furnished provisions and hides in vast quantities, the privateers brought in prizes of great value, spent their money freely, and by enriching, increased the number of the inhabitants; so that, in a short time, the French extended their settlements all along the south-west coast of St. Domingo. In the mean time Tortuga became thoroughly planted, and the tobacco raised there being very good, was most esteemed. With respect to this last island, it is to be observed, that the Buccaneers had formed a settlement there, which had been destroyed by the Spaniards with inexorable cruelty, in the year 1638. The Buccaneers, however, returned, and were again settled by the English under captain Willes, by whose courage and conduct they were in no danger of being disturbed by the Spaniards. Things did not long continue in this situation, for De Poincy sending Vasseur to secure that small island for the French, the Buccaneers of

that nation, settled in the island, joining him, captain Willes, with the troops under his command, was obliged to abandon the place. Though this put the French in possession, they were for many years harassed by the Spaniards, who more than once drove them out of the island; but being constantly supported from their own islands, and joined by the adventurers of all nations, they not only effectually fixed themselves there, but made settlements at St. Domingo; and in twenty years time became so strong, that the Spaniards were glad to live on good terms with them.

Both the Spaniards and English complained loudly of the conduct of the French governors, under colour of whose commissions the Buccaneers committed great disorders, and in time of peace took ships of all nations. Though the French government promised redress, they suffered the governors to go on after their own manner, as they found that it drew numbers of people to their settlements, and was likely to secure them the western part of St. Domingo. However, they did not gain a legal possession until the year 1697, when the Spaniards yielded them one half of the island by the treaty of Ryswick, by which the boundaries were fixed by a line drawn across the country from north to south.

The principal trade of this island for many years consisted in tobacco; but upon the establishment of an exclusive farm of this commodity in France, the trade began to decline, and at last sunk to nothing. They then began to plant sugar, and though they at first met with some difficulties, yet in a short time it became the staple commodity of the island. This is deemed to be the best sugar made

in the West Indies, and generally sells for three or four shillings a hundred more than the sugar brought from any of the other islands; which has occasioned a surprising progress in the cultivation of that valuable commodity. The principal place they possessed on the north side of the island is Cape François, which is happily situated, and has a very good port. The town is large and well peopled. On the west side is Leogane, which was the seat of the government, besides which there are several other considerable towns and good ports.

Sugar, indigo and cotton, have been greatly cultivated, and form the principal articles of export; they also raise cacaos and ginger; coffee grows there very well, and it is believed, that cinnamon, clove and nutmeg-trees, might be raised there; but the great profits arising from their sugar, indigo and cotton, prevents their attempting the culture of these articles. Corn has been sown, but is unprofitable; and though their grapes are very fine, yet they are said to be neither fit for making wine nor raisins. Indeed the French government discouraged their growth, for the benefit of the vineyards of France.

On the south side of the French part of St. Domingo is Avache, a little island, at about twelve leagues distance from the continent. It is about eight leagues in circumference, with a very good soil, and two or three tolerable ports, one of which is capable of receiving ships of three hundred tons. It is very conveniently situated for carrying on a trade with the Spanish colonies on the continent of America.

Cayenne, an island situated in 5 degrees north latitude, and in 53 west longitude, was settled by

the French in the year 1625. It lies adjoining the continent, from whence it is only separated by the river Ovia on the east, and that of Cayenne on the west, from which last it takes its name. It is eighteen or twenty leagues in circumference, and is about seven leagues long and three broad. As it stands high on the coast, at a distance it appears part of the continent. It has three principal capes, Fort St. Louis, Seperon and Matiuri; and its banks are mostly covered with mangroves, which grow in salt water, and from the roots other trees rise up, so close and interwoven with each other, that, in some parts of the island, a man may walk several miles on them without touching the ground. In some parts there is good meadow and pasture ground, but in others it is so low and marshy, especially in the middle, as to be almost impassable.

This island is rendered uncomfortable by the length of the rainy season, by the scorching close air both by day and night, and by the vapours exhaled from the swampy grounds. The inhabitants are also continually tormented with gnats, flies, worms, ants, bugs, and other vermin, which altogether render the place very disagreeable. The soil produces plenty of sugar-canes, which, though small and short-jointed, yield very plentifully. It also abounds in ananas, or pine-apples, oranges, lemons, figs, papaias, ebony and violet-wood; and also indigo and cotton, as well as several sorts of American and European grain. The principal animals for food are, hogs, wild-boars, deer and hares; for large cattle can scarcely live there. The fowl are carrion turkeys, cocks and hens, flamingos, an exceedingly tall bird, that appear in flocks like wild-geese; large wild ducks, with red tufts grow-

ing on their heads; pigeons, ring-doves, woodcocks, ortolans, nightingales, parrots, parroquets, and other birds; but the inhabitants chiefly subsist on turtle. Among the reptiles, there are lizards, camelions, and serpents of a monstrous size, some of which are above twenty-five feet long.

The principal town is also called Cayenne, and stands on the west part of the island, in an advantageous situation, nature and art having equally contributed to fortify it. The fortifications are an irregular hexagon, and consist of a dry ditch, and a rampart, with several batteries mounted with cannon, within which stand above two hundred houses, formed into two streets. On the north-east part of the town, the jesuits had a little chapel that stood in an open place, with a grove of lemon-trees before it. On a pretty steep eminence is the fort of St. Lewis de Caperoux, on the sea side. The weakest places of the island are also defended by batteries.

The next town in the island is, Armire, which is about three leagues distant to the eastward, but is small and thinly peopled.

The poor sort, besides turtle, eat the flesh of the manati, or sea-cow, which is brought, ready salted, from the river of the Amazons, whither several of the inhabitants send barks, to buy it of the Indians for beads, knives, linen, toys, and iron tools. The men in these barks take salt with them, and on their entering the river, the Indians employed in the manati fishery go on board, and having taken the salt, run up the river in canoes, to catch the manatees, which they cut in pieces, and having salted them, return to their barks.

The trade carried on with France, chiefly con-

sists in salt meat, flour, wine, brandy, linen, shoes, wearing apparel, tools, and small wares; in return for which they export sugar, dying woods, and for the most part the same kind of commodities as the Leeward islands.

CHAP. V.

Mr. De la Salle attempts to discover the great river Mississippi, and is murdered by his own soldiers; its settlement afterwards by Mr. D'Ibberville, and the affair turned into a bubble. A description of this river, and of the adjacent countries.

SOME of the French had already proceeded from the rivers and lakes of Canada to the river Mississippi, when Mr. Robert Calaver de la Salle, conceived the design of finding out a passage from the gulf of Mexico to the South Sea, by means of the river Mississippi; for though this river does not run that way, he was in hopes that by sailing up it, he should discover one that did. In pursuance of this plan he laid his proposals before the French king; when his project being approved, he was supplied with four vessels, a man of war of fifty-six guns, a large fly-boat, a small frigate, and a ketch. This squadron, commanded by Mr. Beaujeau, was victualled for a year. Mr. De la Salle had under his command one hundred and fifty landsmen, who were to settle in the country, and twelve gentlemen volunteers: it being proposed to plant a colony and build a fort in the gulf of Mexico, which was to serve both as a magazine, and a place of retreat, in case of misfortunes either by sea or land.

With this squadron Mr. de la Salle sailed from

Rochelle, on the 5th of August, 1684, and passing by Martinico and Guadaloupe, took in fresh provisions and water, with several volunteers. The ketch being separated by a storm, was taken by the Spaniards, but the other three vessels arrived about the middle of February, 1685, in the bay of Spirito Santo, and at about the distance of ten leagues found a large bay, which he mistook for the right arm of the Mississippi, and called it St. Lewis.* Having sounded this bay, he found it deep but narrow, and therefore expressly directed the captain of the fly-boat not to enter it, without having on board the pilot of the frigate, who was an experienced mariner, and to unlade his guns into the pinnace; but the captain neglecting his orders, ran the fly-boat on the sands, where she stuck fast.

Mr. de la Salle was at this time on shore, and being alarmed for the safety of the vessel, was going on board in order to save her, when he was prevented by the appearance of about one hundred and twenty of the natives advancing to attack him. He immediately put his men in a posture of defence, but the noise of his drums alone put them to flight. He then followed them, and presented the calumet of peace, which they accepted, and went along with him to his camp, where having entertained them, he sent them back with some presents. They were so well pleased with their reception, that the next day they returned, bringing provisions, and entered into an alliance with him, which might have proved of great advantage, had it not been interrupted by an accident. As they were endeavouring to unload the fly-boat, in order to get

* The bay of St. Lewis is one hundred miles to the west of the Mississippi.

her off the sands, some blankets fell into the sea, and were driven on shore by the waves. These being found by the Indians, Mr. de la Salle sent a very polite request for them; but some reluctance being manifested at parting with them, the officer rashly threatened to kill them, unless they were restored immediately. This threat had such an effect on the Indians, that they assembled in the night, in order to attack the camp, and be revenged for the insult offered them. The sentinel being asleep, they advanced, and discharged their arrows, by which they killed four officers, and wounded two of the gentlemen; upon this the French running to their arms, fired upon them, and put them to flight, though without doing them any other injury: but the next day they killed two of the men whom they found asleep.

In the mean time the fly-boat was unloaded, but was too far sunk to be got off. At length, Mr. Beaujeau, seeing all the goods and merchandise landed, and the fort almost finished, sailed for France; and Mr. de la Salle having left one hundred men, under the command of Mr. de Moranger, his nephew, marched with the remainder, which amounted to fifty persons, into the country, in order to discover the Mississippi.

In the mean time a new fort was built in a very advantageous situation, defended by twelve pieces of cannon, and the old fort destroyed; but the Indians still killing the French whenever they got them in their power, and Mr. de la Salle seeing no method of concluding an alliance with them, resolved to oblige them to come to an accommodation. For this purpose he again set out from the fort on the 13th of October, with sixty stout men,

with pieces of wood on their breasts, to defend them from the arrows of the Indians. He had not advanced far before he found them encamped, and after several skirmishes, in which he killed and wounded a great number of them, he returned with many prisoners. He then found, that though he had ordered the captain of the frigate to suffer none of his men to land, yet, pleased with the delightful appearance of the country, he had gone on shore with six of his best men in a canoe, in which they left their arms, and then went into a meadow, where, falling asleep, they were killed by the Indians, who broke the canoe in pieces, and this accident had put the whole colony into great consternation.

At length, however, Mr. de la Salle set out again with twenty men, in order to discover the mouth of the river Mississippi; continual rains had rendered the ways very bad, but finding what he imagined to be that river, he fortified a post on its bank, and leaving part of his men, returned to the fort delighted with his discovery. He had there the mortification to find that the frigate, the only vessel he had left, and in which he intended to return to St. Domingo for fresh supplies, had, by the negligence of the pilot, run aground, and was dashed to pieces, by which all his men were drowned, except the Sieur Chefdeville, the captain and four sailors, and all the goods, provisions and tools lost.

Their affairs being thus ruined, they had no other way to return to Europe than by that of Canada. Mr. de la Salle therefore resolved to undertake that journey with twenty men and an Indian called Nicana, who had formerly accompanied him to France, and had given him the greatest proofs of

affection. Mr. Cavalier, Mr. Moranger, and father Anastasius also desired to be of the company. They took with them fire-arms and ammunition, a quantity of glass-beads, two kettles for boiling their meat, and then set out in order to find the Illinois-river.

Having marched three days to the north-east, they entered a fine champaign country, and were met by several men on horseback, with boots, spurs and saddles, which showed they had some communication with the Spaniards. They then marched two days over vast meadows, where they saw such numbers of wild cows, that the smallest herds consisted of about four hundred; ten of these they killed, and stopping two days to rest, dressed their meat, that it might serve them the remainder of their journey. Mr. de la Salle here altered his course, and marched directly to the eastward. Their march was retarded by the Indian, Nicana, crying out that he was bit by a rattle-snake, and was a dead man; they immediately gave him some orvietan, and having scarified the wound, applied to it the salt of vipers, by which he recovered, but this accident detained them several days. Having passed through a most delightful country, at length they came to the settlements of the Cenis, one of the largest and most populous nations in America. These extended twenty leagnes in length, and all that space was interspersed with hamlets. Among these people they found several things they had obtained from the Spaniards, such as pieces of eight, silver spoons and clothes; horses were so common among them that they exchanged one for an axe. From these people they learned, that the Spaniards resided at the distance of six days journey.

Having staid several days among the Cenis, they continued their march through the country of the Nassonis, where Mr. de la Salle and his nephew, Mr. Moranger, being seized with a violent fever, they were obliged to stop two months, which disappointed all their hopes. Though they had not advanced above a hundred and fifty leagues in a direct line, their powder was almost spent, some of the men had deserted to the Indians, and others were ready to follow them; these considerations induced Mr. de la Salle to return to Fort Lewis; and this resolution being approved by the whole body, they marched back to their camp, where they arrived on the 17th of October, 1686, and were received with the greatest joy by their companions.

Mr. de la Salle having staid two months at the fort, during which he caused new entrenchments to be made, and took all possible precautions for the security of the colony, set out again with twenty men, his brother, his two nephews, father Anastasius, and the Sieur Joutel, with a resolution not to return until he had found the Illinois-river. He began his march on the 11th of January, 1687, and having crossed several rivers that were much swelled with rains, entered a fine hunting country, where he and his company remained several days to refresh themselves. He there sent out his nephew, Mr. Moranger, his valet, and seven or eight men, to where Nicana, the faithful Indian, had laid up a stock of beef, in order to get it smoked and dried, that they might carry it along with them, to prevent their being obliged to retard their journey by frequently hunting for provisions; but Mr. Moranger, the valet and Nicana, never returned, be-

ing murdered by some of the Frenchmen, who had plotted their destruction.

Mr. de la Salle being at two leagues distance from the place where these murders were committed, was surprised at his nephew not returning; and apprehending his being seized by the natives, desired father Anastasius to go with him in search of his nephew, taking two Indians along with them. After proceeding about two leagues, they observed some of the party, and going up to them, inquired for Mr. Moranger, on which they pointed to the place where he lay; and two of the villains lying hid in the grass, one of them shot Mr. de la Salle through the head. Thus died this gentleman, who was distinguished by his bravery and conduct, and who deserved a much better fate.

Father Anastasius having performed the last offices for this unhappy gentleman, went in search of Mr. Cavalier, Mr. de la Salle's brother, whom he found in a hut, and was soon after followed by the murderers, who rudely entered, and having seized all they could find, were soon after joined by the rest of those who had engaged in the conspiracy. It was agreed to save the lives of these gentlemen, on account of their being ecclesiastics, and to proceed to the nation of the Cenis. The murderer of Mr. de la Salle was chosen their leader; but soon after a contest arising between him and one Hans, a German, the party divided, and Hans taking his opportunity, shot the murderer through the heart.

On their arrival among the Cenis, they found them preparing to march against an enemy, on which Hans and several others joined them, while the rest staid in the country; but they had no sooner departed than father Anastasius, the Sieur Joutel

and some others, having procured horses, and two Indians for their guides, set out, and proceeding to the north-east, on the 5th of September reached the mouth of the river Illinois, distant a hundred leagues from Fort Crevecoeur, to which they proceeded, and were received at the fort with the greatest respect by the commander; whence being conducted to Quebec, they sailed for France on the 20th of August, 1688.

About seven years after, Mr. D'Ibberville, who had already signalized himself, undertook to execute what Mr. de la Salle had promised; and being encouraged by the court, embarked with a number of adventurers for the mouth of the Mississippi, where he founded the first colony the French ever had on that river. Having provided the colony with necessaries, and erected a fort for their defence against the Indians, he returned to France, in order to obtain supplies. The king being pleased with his success, promised him all the assistance he could desire, and he was soon in a condition to put to sea again. His second voyage proved as fortunate as the first: but he fell sick and died, as he was preparing for the third, which might have proved of fatal consequence to the colony, had it not been for the public spirit of a private gentleman, who, having received from the government authority to act, undertook to support it at his own expence.

In the grant of Louisiana made to Mr. Crouzat by Lewis XIV. in the year 1712, it is said to be bounded by the river and lake of Illinois on the north, by New Mexico on the west, by the Gulf of Mexico on the south, and by Carolina on the east.

This grant did not subsist long; for there being a necessity of having some plausible pretence for

changing the face of public affairs in France, the settlement of this country was thought the most convenient; and all imaginable pains were taken to represent it as a paradise, and a place from whence inexhaustible treasures might be drawn, provided due encouragement might be obtained from the government. To effect this it became necessary to form a new company, to make way for which Mr. Crouzat was prevailed upon to resign his grant. Hence arose the noise that was made about the Mississippi, the romantic stories of the fertility of its banks, and the incredible wealth that would flow from thence. This bubble shook the credit of France, and made way for the bubbles formed by the South Sea company in England.

The Mississippi, or river of St. Lewis, as it is sometimes called, is said by the French to rise in the north-west part of Canada, taking its course to the south-east, but in 45 degrees turns almost due south, and continues its course till it falls into the gulf of Mexico, in 30 degrees north latitude, and 95 west longitude. It is swelled into a very large deep river, by the streams of four or five considerable rivers, that fall into it from the east and west. It is full of islands, which being covered with trees, look like groves rising out of the water, and afford a very agreeable prospect: and on its banks are woods, meadows and hills.

The soil in the neighbourhood of the Mississippi is extremely various, being in some places barren, and in others very fruitful, and naturally abounds with the same plants and animals as Georgia, Carolina and Virginia. The principal produce of this country exported to Europe, are furs, raw hides and tobacco.

THE DISCOVERIES AND SETTLEMENTS

OF THE

DUTCH IN AMERICA.

CHAP. I.

The manner in which Surinam was taken by the Dutch. The commodities brought from thence; a description of the country, its fruits, plants and animals. Manners of the Indian inhabitants.

THE most considerable of the Dutch settlements on the continent is Surinam, which they took from the English. We have already given an account of the expeditions of sir Walter Raleigh, and other persons, to Guiana; after the restoration, lord Willoughby, then governor of Barbadoes, obtained a grant of this country from king Charles II. and made a considerable settlement on the river of Surinam. About that time the coast of Guiana was possessed by three European nations, from Cape Orange almost to the river Oroonoko. The English had a small colony and redoubt on the river Maronury, but their chief settlement was at Surinam river, which was navigable for ships of three hundred tons twenty leagues up. The French had the island of Cayenne, and the rivers Ovia, Corrou and Sinemary, which last is about fifty-three leagues east of Surinam: and the Dutch were settled about the river Aproague, while the Zealanders possessed

the river Berbiche, and had repulsed the English, who attacked them there, with considerable loss. When the first Dutch war broke out, in which the French took part with the Republic, both those nations desired a neutrality in those parts, but the English would not consent to it.

In the year 1666, the states of Zealand being provoked at the English having invaded and taken from them all the lands they possessed in America, except about the Berbiche, sent commodore Creissen, with four ships of war and three hundred men, to attack Surinam. He sailed from Zealand the latter end of January, arrived at Cayenne in March, and from thence steered for Surinam.

He proceeded three leagues up the river, under English colours, to the fort of Paramorbo, without being taken for an enemy: when being discovered for want of signals, the fort fired on his ships, which he returned with broadsides from all his vessels, and immediately landed his forces. The English, who had lived a long time in profound security, found themselves too weak to make a defence on the land side; and the settlements being dispersed along the banks of the river, for thirty leagues up, the fort could receive no succours but by water, where the Zealanders were masters. The English therefore surrendered, on condition, that all the inhabitants of the river Surinam and Kamomioque, who should take an oath of fidelity to the states of Zealand, should enjoy the peaceable possession of their properties; but the houses, &c. belonging to lord Willoughby and other absentees, were to be forfeited; and that all foreigners, who had no estates, should remain prisoners of war, and all the English deliver up their arms.

This capitulation being executed, commodore Creissen put the most valuable part of the plunder on board a fly-boat, took the prisoners on board of one of his vessels, and after causing the fort to be repaired, and put in a posture of defence, he left it in the possession of the sieur de Rome, and then sailed for the islands. Afterwards, when the peace was concluded at Breda, it was agreed that the Dutch should keep Surinam; and, in return, the English should keep the possession of New York, which was then called the New Netherlands.

The commodities raised by the Dutch at Surinam, are sugar, indigo, ginger, tobacco and cotton. Besides this settlement, they have Boron, Berbiche, and Approwack, situated at a small distance from each other, where are raised nearly the same commodities as at Surinam. At Berbiche, however, besides an extraordinary quantity of cotton, they prepare a rich dye, called orlane, from an herb of the same name; and there traffic with the natives for provisions, hides, and other kinds of merchandize.

Surinam, the capital of these settlements, is situated in 60° 30′ north latitude, and in 56 degrees west longitude from London. The country is, in many parts, thinly peopled, especially the low lands, which are often overflowed by the rivers; but the upper hilly countries are very populous. The soil is well watered; the air cooler than towards the coast, and the hills rich in mines of several sorts. All kinds of grain grow there all the year round, except wheat, coming up in a short time, and with little or no distinction of seasons; for there being no winter, the trees are always green, and full of leaves, blossoms and fruit, which is very

plentiful and good. Though this country lies within the torrid zone, the climate is pretty temperate, and the air wholesome; the heats being generally allayed by a fresh easterly wind, which reigns in the day during the greatest part of the year; and at night the land breezes prevail, but do not reach above two or three leagues out to sea. The water is also excellent, and is found by experience to keep sweet during the longest voyages. On the sea coast, which is generally low, are many large islands, fit for feeding of cattle.

Among the fruits of this country are, the bread-fruit, tamarinds, papayas, accajou apples, and many other tropical fruits.

The papaya is produced on a tall slender tree or shrub, with large leaves, somewhat resembling those of the vine; the tree is hollow, and grows fifteen feet high in one year. The fruit is thick and round, and in taste has some resemblance to a cucumber.

The accajou apple is long, thick, and of an orange red: it has a sharp taste, and is commonly eaten baked. At the end of the fruit is a green nut, much in the shape of a sheep's kidney, the kernel has the taste of a filbert, the shell is oily, and on the skin being touched with this oil, it is stained black, so as not to rub off in a long time. This oil is of a medicinal and laxative nature; the stem of the tree on which this fruit grows, resembles that of a chestnut, and the leaves are like those of the bay; its wood, which is very fine, is fit for making all sorts of houshold goods; and of this the Indians form their piraguas, which are commonly forty or fifty feet long.

This country also produces vanillas, tobacco, pete and rocou, Indian wheat, mandioka, cotton, indigo,

and several other useful plants; among which cotton is most cultivated by the Indians, whose women spin it as fine as they please, in order to adorn themselves. The pete is an herb that may be peeled in the same manner as hemp, but the threads are as fine as silk, and would have been long since in great demand in Europe, only that its importation is prohibited.

The vanilla is a weed that creeps up trees in the same manner as ivy; the leaves are of a bright green, long, thick, and pointed at the end; when it has been seven years set in the ground, it begins to bear a kind of husks, full of an oily matter, and a seed smaller than that of a poppy, which is used in Europe in perfuming chocolate, liquors and tobacco.

This country likewise produces several kinds of medicinal gums, woods and roots; as also various sorts of wood for dying, and making of cabinet-work; and, in particular, several kinds of ebony.

Here are incredible numbers of monkeys, of various kinds, among which is one, called by the Indians sapajous, a little yellowish ape, with large eyes, a white face, and black chin. They are of a low stature, and very lively and diverting, but so tender, that it is with great difficulty they can be brought over alive to Europe. The woods also abound with small tygers, deer, hogs, porcupines, camelions, monstrous serpents, and many other animals and reptiles.

Tame and wild fowl are also very plentiful; and with these they supply the European settlements on the sea coast. They consist of parrots, toucans, flamingos, large wild ducks, with red feathers on their heads, and a great variety of other birds,

that are chiefly remarkable for the beauty of their plumage.

The sea, near the coast, abounds with fish; the most common is the cat-fish, which is yellow, and very large, mullets, thornbacks, lamentines and turtle.

The natives are of a reddish complexion, of a low stature, and of a robust, strong constitution. They have long, black and lank hair; and have no other covering than a little cotton wool, which hangs from their waist down to their legs, except several folds of cotton cloth, wherewith they cover their arms and faces, and a sort of crown of feathers, of various colours, which they wear on their heads by way of ornament. They also bore a hole between their nostrils, and hang to it a small piece of money, or a large green stone, or rather crystal, brought from the river of the Amazons; and on this stone they set a great value. They also cut off their beards, and dye their faces with rocou.

The women are generally shorter than the men; but though they appear of a red complexion, they are tolerably handsome, for their eyes are usually blue, and their features well formed. They fasten to their waists a piece of cloth, of about six inches square, of the same sort as that worn by the men on their arms and faces, and woven in stripes of several colours.

These Indians generally live to an advanced age. They are endued with good sense, and are judicious, ingenious, patient and skilful in fishing and hunting. They spend the greatest part of their time in these exercises, and spare no pains in procuring provisions. They are more inclined to peace than war; but will engage in the latter, either

upon a just quarrel, or for the sake of revenge. Their wars are seldom concluded till they have made forty or fifty of their enemies prisoners, whom they either kill, or sell to the Europeans on the coast for slaves. This barbarity seems rather the effect of an ancient custom, than proceeding from their natural dispositions; for when the Europeans represent to them, that, by the laws of God, men are forbid to kill an enemy whom they have taken prisoner, they make no reply; and some of the Asoquas have appeared full of indignation, on being told, that some of the Galibis insinuated to the Europeans, that they would be roasted by them, if they should travel through their country. They are generally great eaters. Their common food is cakes made of the mandioca-root, baked on the embers, Indian wheat, fish and fruit. They do not drink at their ordinary meals till they have done, and then only one draught; but when they assemble together for warlike enterprises, or to admit one into their council, after they have exposed him to several trials, they make extraordinary rejoicings, which frequently hold three or four days, continuing till they have drank all their liquors; for upon these occasions they make three or four different kinds of drink, some of which are rendered strong by fermentation.

CHAP. II.

An account of the islands of Tobago, St. Eustatia, Saba, St. Martin, Curacao, Bonairo and Aruba.

IN the year 1628, king Charles I. granted Tobago, Trinity island, Barbuda and St. Bernard, to

Philip, earl of Pembroke and Montgomery; but it does not appear that any settlement was made on these islands in consequence of this grant; and therefore about the year 1642, the Dutch sent a colony from Flushing, to the island of Tobago, where they fixed themselves very commodiously; and though they at first found the climate sickly and unhealthy, yet in proportion as they cleared the land, the air agreed with them better, and they began to extend their settlements: but while they were in this situation, the Spaniards from the island of Trinity, in conjunction with the Indians from St. Vincent, fell upon them, put them all to the sword, and destroyed their plantations; after which the island was deserted for several years.

About the year 1664, Mr. Adrian Lampsin, a Dutch East India director, and his brother, Mr. Cornelius Lampsin, burgomaster of Flushing, formed the design of re-settling this island entirely at their own expence. Mr. Cornelius Lampsin, having obtained a licence for that purpose from the States, applied to the crown of France, in order to prevent, if possible, any danger to his new colony, from the subjects of that kingdom; upon which Lewis XIV., resolving to oblige the Dutch, created Mr. Lampsin baron of Tobago, with all the privileges of a baron of France. Upon these encouragements the two brothers proceeded, and by their prudent management, in the space of eleven years, rendered this waste and desart country, the most flourishing for its size of any of the Leeward islands.

This island, which lies in 11° 15′ north latitude, is the most easterly of all the islands called the Antilles; it is about twelve leagues in length, four in breadth, and thirty in circumference. From one

of the largest isles in the province of Zealand, they called it New Walcheren, raised a very strong fortress called Lampsinberg, and two other good forts, named Beveren and Belleviste; and, during their administration, settled at their own expence twelve hundred white people in that island; who succeeded in raising all the commodities brought from the West Indies, as tobacco, sugar, ginger, cotton, indigo, cacao, cassia, fustic, rocou, ananas, citrons, oranges, &c.; they had besides some very valuable commodities, not to be found in the other islands, as a great quantity of gum-copal, wild mace and nutmegs, and an excellent kind of sassafras: besides which they raised grain and provisions, sufficient not only for their own use, but to export to the other islands.

However, in 1674, marshal d'Estrees, by the express orders of Lewis XIV. sailed with a large fleet to destroy this very settlement, notwithstanding its being made under his protection, and by his encouragement. The Dutch defended themselves obstinately; but after two hard-fought battles, they were defeated, being overpowered by numbers; and, to the entire ruin of the industrious planters, and the eternal infamy of that prince, the colony was totally destroyed. The island was, however, restored to the Dutch by the treaty of Nimeguen; but on the 27th of December, 1677, it was taken by the count d'Estrees, vice-admiral of France; after which, Tobago was one of the four islands, which, at the peace of Aix-la-chapelle, were declared neutral; notwithstanding which, the marquis de Caylis, governor of the French islands, soon after began to fortify and settle it; but the court of Great Britain warmly remonstrating against

this violation of the peace, the French court disavowed his proceedings, ordered him home, and the settlement to be discontinued. In this state it remained till the definitive treaty of Fountainbleau, in 1703, by which Tobago was ceded to Great Britain.

In 1635, the Dutch took possession of the island of St. Eustatia, and the States granted the property of it to Mr. Vanre, and some other merchants of Flushing, who soon settled a colony upon it, consisting of about six hundred families. But in the year 1665, the Dutch were dispossessed by the English, and colonel Morgan was sent with 300 buccaneers, to keep possession of the place; however, this gentleman soon after making an attempt upon the French part of the island of St. Christopher's, was killed; and the next year the Dutch and French engaging in a war against Great Britain, attacked and made themselves masters of this island, which was afterwards restored to the Dutch by the treaty of Breda. The French, however, took it from them in 1689, but it was restored to them again by the treaty of Ryswick.

St. Eustatia is situated to the north-west of St. Christopher's, in 17° 40′ north latitude. This island, which is only five leagues in compass, appears to the southward like a high mountain rising out of the sea, but stretches out to the northward into a pretty good country. The number of plantations upon it, and the comfortable situation of its inhabitants, do great honour to the industry of the Dutch. All the sides of the mountains are laid out into small well cultivated settlements; the houses are well built and well furnished; most of the inhabitants are in good circumstances, and have ware-

houses filled with European commodities, with which they furnish their neighbours, at a high price, whenever they happen to be disappointed of supplies from England and France. They also raise, besides some other commodities, great quantities of excellent tobacco, which comes to a good market in Holland; and yet there is not a drop of water in the island but what they are supplied with from the clouds, which they preserve so carefully in cisterns, that they are very seldom distressed. The top of the mountain is covered with a vast wood; in the middle of which, instead of the point that might be expected, as it rises in the form of a sugar-loaf, there is a wide and deep cavern, which was probably once a volcano.

To the north-west of this island lies that of Saba, in 17° 35′ north latitude. It at first sight appears to be a rock, but the Dutch governors of St. Eustatia settled a small colony there, in a valley, where they raise tobacco and other things. Both these islands have the misfortune of not having a single port; St. Eustatia, however, has a good road, where all the ships ride, and the Dutch have erected a pretty strong fort to command it.

We now come to the island of St. Martin, situated in 18° 15′ north latitude; a little inconsiderable island, about seven leagues in length, and four in breadth. Its smallness is not its only disadvantage; for the climate is far from being wholesome, and the soil cannot be very fertile, as there are no rivers, and very few springs, and even these are dried up in the hot seasons, so that the inhabitants are obliged to have recourse to their cisterns of rain-water; yet, as insignificant as this place may appear, it has been contended for by the Spa-

niards, French and Dutch. The French were the first European nation who attempted to settle this island; but allowing the Dutch to trade with them, they seized a favourable opportunity, surprised the French, drove them out, and then built a fort for their own security; but the Spaniards not liking their neighbourhood, drove out the Dutch in their turn, and erected a strong fortress, to prevent any other nation settling upon it: however, perceiving that the English, French and Dutch, had seized the more valuable islands, they thought it ridiculous to be any longer at the expence of keeping this. This resolution was taken in the year 1648, and was soon after executed; for having destroyed their cisterns, burned their houses, and blown up their fort, they retired to Porto Rico.

In this Spanish garrison were four Frenchmen, five Dutchmen and a Mulatto, who, being unwilling to go, hid themselves in a wood until the Spaniards had embarked, and then sallied forth to take possession of the whole island. However, they soon divided, and made choice of different places to settle in; they even agreed, by a formal treaty, to divide the country between the French and Dutch nations. The Dutch having built a small canoe, sent one of their number to St. Eustatia, to inform the governor of their situation, and promised the French to send the like notice to the governor of St. Christopher's: the former, being their own affair, was exactly performed; but the latter concerning only their neighbours, was entirely neglected.

The governor of St. Eustatia being willing to seize this new acquisition, sent one Martin Thomas, with a considerable number of planters, to take possession of that part of the island which belonged to

the Dutch. After this they treated the French but indifferently, who receiving no news from their countrymen, began to suspect the cause; and, therefore, with some difficulty sent a person to St. Christopher's, to inform M. de Poincy of the agreement they had made, and the hardships under which they laboured: whereupon he dispatched an officer and thirty men, to take possession for the crown of France; but the Dutch would not suffer them to land, declaring, that they considered themselves as the legal possessors of that island.

The French officer no sooner returned to St. Christopher's than M. de Poincy sent his nephew to put an end to the dispute; and this commission he performed so effectually, that the Dutch governor was glad to settle the division of the island according to the first agreement; by which all that part of it towards Anguilla was to belong to the French, while the other side, in which the Spanish fort before stood, remained in the possession of the Dutch; the former was, indeed, in every respect the best half; but the Dutch had, on their side, the advantage of some salt pits. This contract was settled on the top of the highest hill in the island, which, on that account was called La Montagne des Accordées, or the Mountain of Agreement. In this island there is great plenty of a remarkable kind of tree, which both the Dutch and French call candle-wood; for the small sticks serve for candles, and, at the same time, yield a very agreeable scent. We now proceed to their other islands, which lie nearer the Spanish coast, and from which they receive great advantages.

Curacao, or, as it is pronounced and sometimes written by the Dutch, Currassaw, is an island about

nine or ten leagues long, and five broad, situated in 12° 40′ north latitude; but though the soil is far from being fruitful, and the climate still farther from being either agreeable or healthy, yet such has been the care and industry of the Dutch, that they receive great advantages from this small, and, to appearance, inconsiderable country, in which there was formerly great quantities of cattle. But having turned their extensive pastures into sugar and tobacco plantations, it is thought that the provisions raised in this island would scarcely maintain its inhabitants for one day; yet they are so far from being exposed to want, that there is not a more plentiful or better provided place in the West Indies; every thing, however, fetches a high price, but this is so far from being a disadvantage, that it is the principal source of the great wealth of the inhabitants.

The harbour of Santa Barbara is on the south side of the east end of the island, but the chief harbour is about three leagues from the south-east end of the south side, where the Dutch have a very good town and a strong fort; there is no anchoring at its entrance, but inside the harbour is very secure. The town, for its size, is one of the finest in America, and it has every thing requisite to render it commodious and agreeable, as far as the climate and soil will permit. The public buildings are very neat. All kind of labour is performed by engines; and all nations are, with equal readiness, furnished with provisions, naval stores, ammunition, and even artillery.

Bonaira and Aruba are also two islands in the possession of the Dutch, dependent on the island of Curacao. The former lies ten leagues to the

eastward of that island, and is about seventeen leagues in compass. The Dutch have a deputy-governor, a guard of soldiers, and a considerable number of Indians, with a fort for the protection and security of the place.

The Indians are husbandmen, and cultivate yams, potatoes, maize and Guinea corn; but they are chiefly employed about cattle, particularly in sending great quantities of goat's flesh to Curacoa. There are also horses and black cattle, though they are not so numerous as the goats; but in all the island there are no sheep or hogs, or any other animals except those already mentioned. The south side is a plain, low land, and there are several sorts of trees, but none very large. There is a small spring of water, which, notwithstanding its being brackish, serves the inhabitants; however, at the west end of the island there is a good spring of fresh water, and three or four Indian families live there. These springs afford all the fresh water found in the place. Near the east end is a good salt-pond, where Dutch sloops go for salt, which is now become a very considerable commodity there.

The island of Aruba lies seven leagues west of Curacao; but though it is not very considerable, the inhabitants breed some cattle, particularly a number of horses; this renders it of service to the chief colony, which it also furnishes with large quantities of vegetables and herbs, without which the people at Curacao could not subsist; for, among other methods of getting money, one is, their allowing strangers to erect hospitals on shore, in which they consume great quantities of these articles, for which they pay very high prices, as they do for all other conveniences.

But to return to Curacao. As this island is not above seven leagues from the Spanish coast, it is commodiously situated for carrying on a clandestine trade. This was first begun by the sale of Negroes, brought thither by the Dutch from their numerous settlements on the coast of Guinea; these were bought by the Spaniards, who transported 1500 at a time in their own vessels. But since the English at Jamaica have interfered in this trade, it has sunk considerably. However, the dealers at Curacao, and their correspondents in Holland, were too conversant in business, to let the declension of the slave trade deprive them of the benefit of this island; they therefore built vast magazines, which they stored with European goods; and this not only preserved them the remainder of that trade, which was winked at by the Spanish governors, but the Spaniards, under pretence of buying slaves, ran all hazards to purchase the European commodities they wanted, by which means vast sums are annually traded for in this way.

It has been computed, that in time of peace the trade of this island did not produce less to the Dutch than five millions of florins per annum, which is about half a million sterling. But in time of war their profit is much larger, for then every article of their commerce is greatly increased.

DANISH SETTLEMENTS IN AMERICA.

A short description of the islands of St. Thomas and St. Croix, in the possession of the Danes.

THE only remaining islands in this part of the world, that we shall now mention, are those of St. Thomas and St. Croix, which belong to the Danes: the former is situated in 18 degrees north latitude, and is one of that cluster of islands called the Virgins. Though it is not above seven leagues in circumference, it is in a commodious situation, and has an excellent port, of an oval form, and in a manner surrounded by two promontories, which defend the ships that lie within from almost all winds. At the end of this port is a small fortress, which stands in a plain, and is a regular square, with four small bastions, but has neither outworks nor ditch, it being only surrounded with a palisade. On the right and left of the fort are two small eminences, which, though they seem designed for batteries, that would command the whole harbour, yet no such use is made of them. The king of Denmark has a governor and a garrison here; notwithstanding which, there is a large factory on the island, belonging to the Brandenburghers, subjects of the king of Prussia.

The neighbourhood of the Spanish island of Porto Rico, which is only seventeen leagues distance, secures the inhabitants from the danger of

wanting provisions, to which they would otherwise be exposed; for though the soil is tolerably good, and every foot of it cultivated, yet it does not produce sufficient for the maintenance of the inhabitants, who are very numerous.

The town of St. Thomas consists of one long street, at the end of which is the Danish magazine, a large, magnificent, and convenient building. The Brandenburgh factory is also very considerable, and the persons belonging to it are chiefly French refugees, who fled thither when the protestants were expelled from the French islands. The chief produce of their plantations is sugar, which is very fine grained, but made in small quantities. The Danish governor, who is usually a man of some rank, generally acquires a considerable fortune in that station, and the directors of the Danish trade also become rich in a few years; the inhabitants in general are in easy circumstances.

To this island the Spaniards continually send large vessels to purchase slaves. This is the chief support of the Danish and Brandenburgh commerce, as these slaves are drawn from their settlements on the coast of Africa, which, if they had not this trade, would have long ago become useless, and consequently deserted. The Spaniards also buy here, as well as at Curacao, European goods, of which there is always a vast stock in the magazine, belonging to the Dutch. There is likewise a great resort of English, Dutch, and French vessels, to this port, where they can always depend upon the sale of superfluous, and the purchase of necessary commodities. But though a prodigious deal of business is transacted in time of peace, in time of war it is vastly increased; for being a neutral port,

6271

the privateers of all nations resort thither to sell their prizes.

St. Croix is situated about five leagues east of St. Thomas's, and about thirty west of St. Christopher's, in 18 degrees north latitude, and in 65 west longitude. It is about ten or twelve leagues in length, but not above three broad. The air is very unhealthy, but the soil is easily cultivated, and produces sugar-canes, citrons, oranges, lemons, pomegranates, and other excellent fruits; and has several fine trees, whose wood is very beautiful, and proper for inlaying.

This island has had several masters; but the French abandoning it in 1696, it was purchased by his Danish majesty. It was then a perfect desart, but was settled with great expedition, many persons from the English islands, and among them some of great wealth, having resorted thither.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

CATHEDRAL LIBRARY,
A. M. D. G.
111 E. 50TH STREET,
NEW YORK CITY.

6271

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

form 410

R[illegible] 0 1915